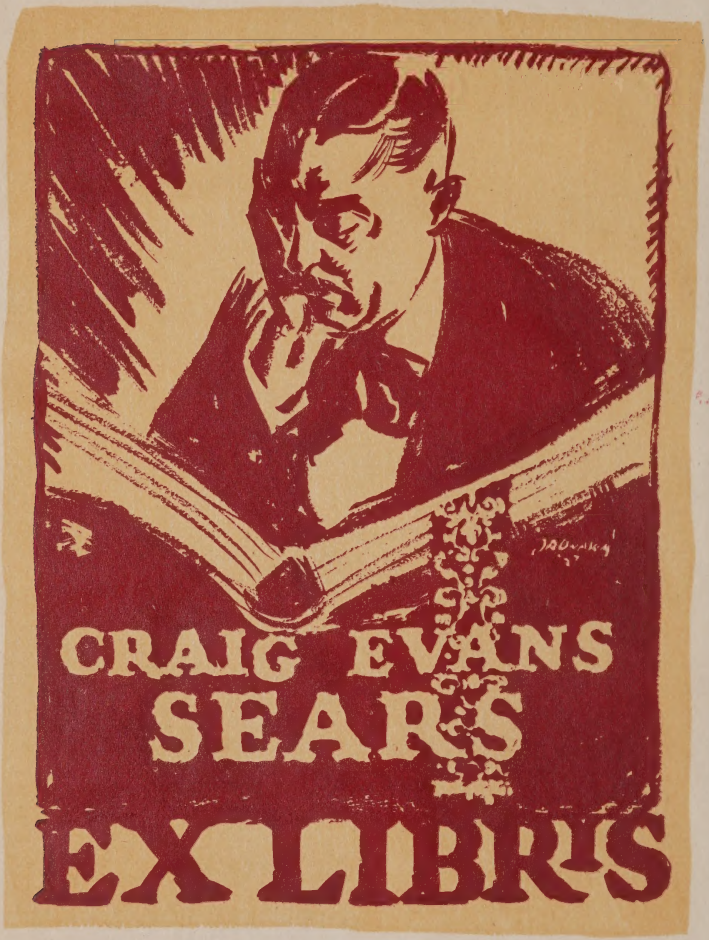
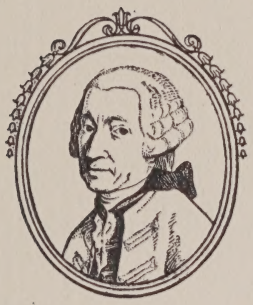

CRAIG EVANS
SEARS
EX LIBRIS

REFERENCE LIBRARY * HOUGHTON MIFFLIN CO. * BOSTON, MASS.
Archive
Collection
This book may not be removed from the Library
and if borrowed must be returned within 7 days

The Novels of Tobias Smollett
Large Paper Edition
Peregrine Pickle Volume II



Geo. Cruikshank

Pallet's Fright

PEREGRINE PICKLE, Vol. II, Chap. xlvi.

Frontispiece

Pallet's Bright

Peregrine Pickle, Vol. II, Chap. xlvi.
(Frontispiece

The Adventures of PEREGRINE PICKLE

IN WHICH ARE INCLUDED

MEMOIRS *of a* LADY *of* QUALITY

By Tobias Smollett

Volume the Second

Respicere exemplar vitæ morumque jubebo
Doctum imitatorem, & veras hinc ducere voces.

HORACE

Boston & New York: Houghton Mifflin Company
Printed at the Shakespeare Head Press
Stratford-upon-Avon, & published for the Press
by Basil Blackwell, Oxford, England
1926

THIS EDITION PRINTED FROM TYPE AT THE
SHAKESPEARE HEAD PRESS STRATFORD-UPON-
AVON ENGLAND IS LIMITED TO FIVE HUNDRED
NUMBERED COPIES OF WHICH THIS IS NO
Publishers Copy

THE CONTENTS OF THE SECOND VOLUME

CHAP. XXXV.

HE *embarks for* France; *is overtaken by a ſtorm; is ſurprised with the appearance of* Pipes; *lands at* Calais, *and has an affair with the officers of the cuſtom-house.* Page 1

CHAP. XXXVI.

He makes a fruitleſs attempt in gallantry; departs for Boulogne, *where he ſpends the evening with certain* English *exiles.* p. 9

CHAP. XXXVII.

Proceeds for the capital. Takes up his lodging at Bernay, *where he is overtaken by Mr.* Hornbeck, *whoſe head he longs to fortify.* p. 17

CHAP. XXXVIII.

They ſet out in company, breakfaſt at Abbe Ville, *dine at* Amiens, *and about eleven o'clock arrive at* Chantilly, *where* Peregrine *executes a plan which he had concerted upon* Hornbeck. p. 22

CHAP. XXXIX.

He in involved in an adventure at Paris, *and taken priſoner by the city-guard. Becomes acquainted with a* French *nobleman, who introduces him into the* beau monde. p. 27

CHAP. XL.

Acquires a diſtinct idea of the French *government; quarrels*

with a mousquetaire, whom he afterwards fights and vanquishes, after having punished him for interfering in his amorous recreations. p. 35

CHAP. XLI.

Mr. Jolter *threatens to leave him on account of his misconduct, which he promises to rectify; but his resolution is defeated by the impetuosity of his passions. He meets accidentally with Mrs.* Hornbeck, *who elopes with him from her husband, but is restored by the interposition of the* British *embassador.* p. 45

CHAP. XLII.

Peregrine *resolves to return to* England, *is diverted with the odd characters of two of his countrymen, with whom he contracts an acquaintance in the apartments of the Palais Royal.* p. 54

CHAP. XLIII.

He introduces his new friends to Mr. Jolter, *with whom the doctor enters into a dispute upon government, which had well nigh terminated in open war.* p. 63

CHAP. XLIV.

The doctor prepares an entertainment in the manner of the ancients, which is attended with divers ridiculous circumstances. p. 69

CHAP. XLV.

The painter is persuaded to accompany Pickle *to a masquerade in woman's apparel; is engaged in a troublesome adventure, and with his companion conveyed to the* Bastile. p. 80

CHAP. XLVI.

By the fidelity of Pipes, Jolter *is informed of his pupil's fate. Confers with the physician. Applies to the Embassador, who with great difficulty obtains the discharge of the prisoners, on certain conditions.* p. 86

CHAP. XLVII.

Peregrine *makes himself merry at the expence of the painter, who curses his landlady, and breaks with the doctor.* p. 91

CHAP. XLVIII.

Pallet *conceives an hearty contempt for his fellow traveller, and attaches himself to* Pickle, *who, nevertheless, persecutes him with his mischievous talent, upon the road to* Flanders. p. 100

CHAP. XLIX.

Nor is the physician sacred from his ridicule. They reach Arras, *where our adventurer engages in play with two* French *officers, who next morning give the landlord an interesting proof of their importance.* p. 108

CHAP. L.

Peregrine *moralizes upon their behaviour, which is condemned by the doctor, and defended by the governor. They arrive in safety at* Lisle, *dine at an ordinary, visit the citadel. The physician quarrels with a* North-Briton, *who is put in arrest.* p. 113

CHAP. LI.

Pickle *engages with a knight of* Malta, *in a conversation upon the* English *stage, which is followed by a dissertation on the theatres of the ancients, by the doctor.* p. 119

CHAP. LII.

An adventure happens to Pipes, *in consequence of which he is dismissed from* Peregrine's *service. The whole company set out for* Ghent *in the* Diligence. *Our hero is captivated by a lady in that carriage; interests her spiritual director in his behalf.* p. 126

CHAP. LIII.

He makes some progress in her affections; is interrupted by a dispute between Jolter *and a* Jew; *appeases the wrath of the Capuchin, who procures for him an interview with his fair enslaver, in which he finds himself deceived.* p. 134

CHAP. LIV.

He makes another effort towards the accomplishment of his wish, which is postponed by a strange accident. p. 139

CHAP. LV.

They depart from Ghent. *Our hero engages in a political dispute with his mistress, whom he offends, and pacifies with submission. He practises an expedient to detain the carriage at* Alost, *and confirms the priest in his interest.* p. 144

CHAP. LVI.

The French coquet entraps the heart of the Jew, *against whom* Pallet *enters into a conspiracy; by which* Peregrine *is again disappointed, and the* Hebrew's *incontinence exposed.* p. 151

CHAP. LVII.

Pallet, *endeavouring to unravel the mystery of the treatment he had received, falls out of the frying-pan into the fire.* p. 156

CHAP. LVIII.

Peregrine, *almoſt diſtracted with his disappointments, conjures the fair* Fleming *to permit his visits at* Brussels. *She withdraws from his pursuit.* p. 169

CHAP. LIX.

Peregrine *meets with Mrs.* Hornbeck, *and is consoled for his loss. His valet de chambre is embroiled with her duenna, whom, however, he finds means to appease.* p. 175

CHAP. LX.

Hornbeck *is informed of his wife's adventure with* Peregrine, *for whom he prepares a ſtratagem, which is rendered ineffectual by the information of* Pipes. *The husband is ducked for his intention, and our hero apprehended by the patrol.* p. 180

CHAP. LXI.

Peregrine *is released.* Jolter *confounded at his myſterious conduct. A conteſt happens between the poet and painter, who are reconciled by the meditation of their fellow travellers.* p. 187

CHAP. LXII.

The travellers depart for Antwerp, *at which place the painter gives a loose to his enthusiasm.* p. 194

CHAP. LXIII.

Peregrine *artfully foments a quarrel between* Pallet *and the physician, who fight a duel on the ramparts.* p. 201

CHAP. LXIV.

The Doctor exults in his victory. They set out for Rotterdam, *where they are entertained by two* Dutch *gentlemen in a*

yacht, which is overturned in the Maeze, *to the manifeſt hazard of the painter's life. They ſpend the evening with their entertainers, and next day viſit a cabinet of curioſities.* p. 211

CHAP. LXV.

They proceed to the Hague; *from whence they depart for* Amſterdam, *where they ſee a* Dutch *tragedy. Viſit the muſick-houſe, in which* Peregrine *quarrels with the captain of a man of war. They paſs through* Haarlem, *in their way to* Leyden. *Return to* Rotterdam, *where the company ſeparates, and our hero, with his attendants, arrives in ſafety at* Harwich. p. 218

CHAP. LXVI.

Peregrine *delivers his letters of recommendation at* London, *and returns to the gariſon, to the unſpeakable joy of the commodore and his whole family.* p. 225

CHAP. LXVII.

Sees his ſiſter happily married. Viſits Emilia, *who receives him according to his deſerts.* p. 233

CHAP. LXVIII.

He attends his uncle with great affection, during a fit of illneſs. Sets out again for London; *meets with his friend* Godfrey, *who is prevailed upon to accompany him to* Bath; *on the road to which place, they chance to dine with a perſon, who entertains them with a curious account of a certain company of adventurers.* p. 239

CHAP. LXIX.

Godfrey *executes a ſcheme at* Bath, *by which a whole company of ſharpers is ruined.* p. 245

CHAP. LXX.

The two friends eclipse all their competitors in gallantry, and practise a pleasant project of revenge upon the physicians of the place. p. 251

CHAP. LXXI.

Peregrine *humbles a noted hector, and meets with a strange character at the house of a certain lady.* p. 260

CHAP. LXXII.

He cultivates an acquaintance with the Misanthrope, who favours him with a short sketch of his own history. p. 267

THE ADVENTURES OF PEREGRINE PICKLE

CHAP. XXXV.

He embarks for France; *is overtaken by a ſtorm; is ſurprised with the appearance of* Pipes; *lands at* Calais, *and has an affair with the officers of the cuſtom-houſe.*

SCARCE had the veſſel proceeded two leagues on the paſſage, when the wind ſhifting, blew directly in their teeth; ſo that they were obliged to haul upon a wind, and alter their courſe. The ſea running pretty high at the ſame time, our hero, who was below in his cabbin, began to be ſqueamiſh, and in conſequence of the ſkipper's advice, went upon deck for the comfort of his ſtomach; while the governor, experienced in theſe diſaſters, ſlipt into bed, where he lay at his eaſe, amuſing himſelf with a treatiſe on the Cycloid, with algebraical demonſtrations, which never failed to engage his imagination in the moſt agreeable manner.

In the mean time the wind increaſed to a very hard gale, the veſſel pitched with great violence, the ſea waſhed over the decks, the maſter was alarmed, the crew were confounded, the paſſengers were overwhelmed with ſickneſs and fear, and univerſal diſtraction enſued.

In the midſt of this uproar, Peregrine holding faſt by the taffril, and looking ruefully ahead, the countenance of Pipes preſented itſelf to his aſtonished view, rising as it were from the hold of the ship. At firſt he imagined it was a fear-formed shadow of his own brain; though he did not long remain in this error, but plainly perceived that it was no other than the real person of Thomas, who jumping on the quarter deck, took charge of the helm, and dictated to the sailors with as much authority as if he had been commander of the ship. The skipper looked upon him as an angel sent to his aſſiſtance, and the crew soon discovering him to be a thorough-bred seaman, notwithſtanding his livery-frock, obeyed his orders with such alacrity that in a little time the confusion vanished, and every necessary ſtep was taken to weather the gale.

Our young gentleman immediately conceived the meaning of Tom's appearance on board, and when the tumult was a little subsided, went up and encouraged him to exert himself for the preservation of the ship, promising to take him again into his service, from which he should never be dismissed, except at his own desire. This assurance had a surprising effect upon Pipes, who, though he made no manner of reply, thruſt the helm into the maſter's hand, saying, "Here, you old bum-boat woman, take hold of the tiller, and keep her thus, boy, thus;" and skipped about the vessel, trimming the sails, and managing the ropes with such agility and skill, that every body on deck ſtood amazed at his dexterity.

Mr. Jolter was far from being unconcerned at the uncommon motion of the vessel, the singing of the wind, and the uproar which he heard above him; he looked towards the cabbin-door with the moſt fearful expectation, in hope of seeing some person who could give some ac-

count of the weather, and what was doing upon deck; but not a soul appeared, and he was too well acquainted with the disposition of his own bowels to make the least alteration in his attitude. When he had lain a good while in all the agony of suspence, the boy tumbled headlong into his apartment, with such noise, that he believed the mast had gone by the board, and starting upright in his bed, asked with all the symptoms of horror, what was the cause of that disturbance? The boy, half stunned by his fall, answered in a dolorous tone, "I'm come to put up the dead-lights." At mention of dead-lights, the meaning of which he did not understand, the poor governor's heart died within him; he shivered with despair. His recollection forsaking him, he fell upon his knees in the bed, and fixing his eyes upon the book which was in his hand, began to pronounce aloud with great fervor, "The time of a compleat oscillation in the cycloid, is to the time in which a body would fall through the axis of the cycloid DV, as the circumference of a circle to its diameter—" He would in all likelihood have proceeded with the demonstration of this proposition, had he not been seized with such a qualm as compelled him to drop the book, and accommodate himself to the emergency of his distemper; he therefore stretched himself at full length, and putting up ejaculations to heaven, began to prepare himself for his latter end, when all of a sudden the noise above was intermitted; and as he could not conceive the cause of this tremendous silence, he imagined that either the men were washed overboard, or that despairing of safety, they had ceased to oppose the tempest. While he was harrowed by this miserable incertainty, which, however, was not altogether unenlightened by some scattered rays of hope, the master entered the

cabbin: then he asked with a voice half extinguished by fear, how matters went upon deck? and the skipper with a large bottle of brandy applied to his mouth, answered in a hollow tone, "All's over now, master." Upon which Mr. Jolter giving himself over for lost, exclaimed with the utmost horror, "Lord, have mercy upon us! Christ, have mercy upon us!" and repeated this supplication as it were mechanically, until the master undeceived him, by explaining the meaning of what he had said, and assuring him that the squall was over.

Such a sudden transition from fear to joy, occasioned a violent agitation both in his mind and body; and it was a full quarter of an hour before he recovered the right use of his organs. By this time the weather cleared up, the wind began to blow again from the right corner, and the spires of Calais appeared at the distance of five leagues; so that the countenances of all on board were lighted up with joyous expectation; and Peregrine venturing to go down into the cabbin, comforted his governor with an account of the happy turn of their affairs.

Jolter, transported with the thought of a speedy landing, began to launch out in praise of that country for which they were bound. He observed, that France was the land of politeness and hospitality, which were conspicuous in the behaviour of all ranks and degrees, from the peer to the peasant; that a gentleman and a foreigner, far from being insulted and imposed upon by the lower class of people, as in England, was treated with the utmost reverence, candour and respect; that their fields were fertile, their climate pure and healthy, their farmers rich and industrious, and the subjects in general the happiest of men. He would have prosecuted this favourite theme still farther, had not his pupil been ob-

liged to run upon deck, in consequence of certain warnings he received from his ſtomach.

The skipper ſeeing his condition, very honeſtly reminded him of the cold ham and fowls, with a basket of wine, which he had ordered to be ſent on board, and asked if he would have the cloth laid below. He could not have chosen a more seasonable opportunity of manifeſting his own diſintereſtedness. Peregrine made wry faces at the mention of food, bidding him, for Chriſt's sake, talk no more on that subject. He then descended into the cabbin, and put the same queſtion to Mr. Jolter, who, he knew, entertained the same abhorrence for his proposal; and meeting with the like reception from him, went between decks, and repeated his courteous proffer to the valet de chambre and lacquey, who lay sprawling in all the pangs of a double evacuation, and rejected his civility with the moſt horrible loathing. Thus baffled in all his kind endeavours, he ordered his boy to secure the provision in one of his own lockers, according to the cuſtom of the ship.

It being low water when they arrived on the French coaſt, the vessel could not enter the harbour, and they were obliged to bring to, and wait for a boat, which in less than half an hour came along-side from the shore. Mr. Jolter now came upon deck, and snuffing up the French air with symptoms of infinite satisfaction, asked of the boatmen, with the friendly appellation of *Mes enfans*, what they demanded for transporting him and his pupil with their baggage to the pier. But how was he disconcerted, when those polite, candid reasonable watermen, demanded a Louis d'or for that service! Peregrine with a sarcaſtic sneer, observed, that he already began to perceive the juſtice of his encomiums on

the French; and the disappointed governor could say nothing in his own vindication, but that they were debauched by their intercourse with the inhabitants of Dover. His pupil, however, was so much offended at their extortion, that he absolutely refused to employ them, even when they abated one half in their demand, and swore he would ſtay on board till the packet should be able to enter the harbour, rather than encourage such imposition.

The maſter, who in all probability had some sort of fellow-feeling with the boatmen, in vain represented, that he could not with safety lie to, or anchor upon a lee-shore; our hero having consulted Pipes, answered, that he had hired his vessel to transport him to Calais, and that he would oblige him to perform what he had undertaken.

The skipper, very much mortified at this peremptory reply, which was not over and above agreeable to Mr. Jolter, dismissed the boat, notwithſtanding the solicitations and condescension of the watermen. Running a little farther in shore, they came to an anchor, and waited till there was water enough to float them over the bar. Then they ſtood into the harbour, and our gentleman, with his attendants and baggage, were landed on the pier by the sailors, whom he liberally rewarded for their trouble.

He was immediately plied by a great number of porters, who, like so many hungry wolves, laid hold on his luggage, and began to carry it off piece-meal, without his order or direction. Incensed at this officious insolence, he commanded them to deſiſt, with many oaths and opprobrious terms that his anger suggeſted; and perceiving that one of them did not seem to pay any regard to what he said, but marched off with his burden,

he snatched a cudgel out of his lacquey's hand, and overtaking the fellow in a twinkling, brought him to the ground with one blow. He was instantly surrounded by the whole congregation of this *canaille*, who resented the injury which their brother had sustained, and would have taken immediate satisfaction of the aggressor, had not Pipes, seeing his master involved, brought the whole crew to his assistance, and exerted himself so manfully, that the enemy were obliged to retreat with many marks of defeat, and menaces of interesting the commandant in their quarrel. Jolter, who knew and dreaded the power of the French governor, began to shake with apprehension, when he heard their repeated threats; but they durst not apply to this magistrate, who, upon a fair representation of the case, would have punished them severely for their rapacious and insolent behaviour. Peregrine, without further molestation, availed himself of his own attendants, who shouldered his baggage, and followed him to the gate, where they were stopt by the centinels, until their names should be registered.

Mr. Jolter, who had undergone this examination before, resolved to profit by his experience, and cunningly represented his pupil as a young English lord. This intimation, supported by the appearance of his equipage, was no sooner communicated to the officer, than he turned out the guard, and ordered his soldiers to rest upon their arms, while his lordship passed in great state to the *Lion d'Argent*, where he took up his lodging for the night, resolving to set out for Paris next morning in a post-chaise.

The governor triumphed greatly in this piece of complaisance and respect with which they had been honoured, and resumed his beloved topic of discourse, in

applauding the method and subordination of the French government, which was better calculated for maintaining order and protecting the people, than any conſtitution upon earth. Of their courteous attention to ſtrangers, there needed no other proof than the compliment which had been paid to them, together with the governor's connivance at Peregrine's employing his own ſervants in carrying the baggage to the inn, contrary to the privilege of the inhabitants.

While he expatiated with a remarkable degree of ſelf-indulgence on this ſubject, the valet de chambre coming into the room interrupted his harangue, by telling his maſter, that their trunks and portmanteaus muſt be carried to the cuſtom-houſe, in order to be ſearched, and ſealed with lead, which muſt remain untouched until their arrival at Paris.

Peregrine made no objection to this practice, which was in itſelf reaſonable enough; but when he underſtood that the gate was beſieged by another multitude of porters, who inſiſted upon their right of carrying the goods, and alſo of fixing their own price, he abſolutely refuſed to comply with their demand. Nay he chaſtiſed ſome of the moſt clamorous among them with his foot, and told them, that if their cuſtom-houſe officers had a mind to examine his baggage, they might come to the inn for that purpoſe. The valet de chambre was abaſhed at this boldneſs of his maſter's behaviour, which the lacquey, ſhruging up his ſhoulders, obſerved was *bien a l'Angloiſe;* while the governor repreſented it as an indignity to the whole nation, and endeavoured to perſwade his pupil to comply with the cuſtom of the place. But Peregrine's natural haughtineſs of diſpoſition hindered him from giving ear to Jolter's wholeſome advice;

and in less than half an hour they observed a file of musqueteers marching up to the gate. At sight of this detachment the tutor trembled, the valet grew pale, and the lacquey crossed himself; but our hero, without exhibiting any other symptoms than those of indignation, met them on the threshold, and with a ferocious air demanded their business. The corporal who commanded the file answered with great deliberation, that he had orders to convey his baggage to the custom house; and seeing the trunks standing in the entry, placed his men between them and the owner, while the porters that followed, took them up, and proceeded to the Douane without opposition.

Pickle was not mad enough to dispute the authority of this message; but, in order to gall, and specify his contempt for those who brought it, he called aloud to his valet, desiring him, in French, to accompany his things, and see that none of his linnen and effects should be stolen by the searchers. The corporal, mortified at this satirical insinuation, darted a look of resentment at the author, as if he had been interested for the glory of his nation; and told him, that he could perceive he was a stranger in France, or else he would have saved himself the trouble of such a needless precaution.

CHAP. XXXVI.

He makes a fruitless attempt in gallantry; departs for Boulogne, *where he spends the evening with certain* English *exiles.*

HAVING thus yielded to the hand of power, he enquired if there was any other English company in the house; when understanding that a gentleman and

lady lodged in the next apartment, and had bespoke a poſt-chaise for Paris, he ordered Pipes to ingratiate himself with their footman, and, if possible, learn their names and condition, while he and Mr. Jolter, attended by the lacquey, took a turn round the ramparts, and viewed the particulars of the fortification.

Tom was so very successful in his inquiry, that when his maſter returned, he was able to give him a very satisfactory account of his fellow-lodgers, in consequence of having treated his brother with a bottle of wine. The people in queſtion were a gentleman and his lady lately arrived from England, in their way to Paris. The husband was a man of good fortune, who had been a libertine in his youth, and a profeſſed declaimer againſt matrimony. He wanted neither sense nor experience, and piqued himself in particular upon his art in avoiding the snares of the female sex, in which he pretended to be deeply versed. But, notwithſtanding all his caution and skill, he had lately fallen a sacrifice to the attractions of an oyſter wench, who had found means to decoy him into the bands of wedlock; and, in order to evade the compliments and congratulations of his friends and acquaintance, he had come so far on a tour to Paris, where he intended to initiate his spouse in the beau monde. In the mean time he chose to live upon the reserve, because her natural talents had as yet received but little cultivation; and he had not the moſt implicit confidence in her virtue and discretion, which, it seems, had like to have yielded to the addresses of an officer at Canterbury, who had made shift to insinuate himself into her acquaintance and favour.

Peregrine's curiosity being inflamed by this information, he lounged about the yard, in hopes of seeing the

Dulcinea who had captivated the old batchelor; and at length observing her at a window, took the liberty of bowing to her with great reſpect. She returned the compliment with a curt'sie, and appeared ſo decent in her dreſs and manner, that unleſs he had been previouſly informed of her former life and converſation, he never would have dreamt that her education was different from that of other ladies of faſhion; ſo eaſy it is to acquire that external deportment on which people of condition value themſelves ſo much. Not but that Mr. Pickle pretended to diſtinguiſh a certain vulgar audacity in her countenance, which in a lady of birth and fortune would have paſſed for an agreeable vivacity that enlivens the aſpect, and gives poignancy to every feature; but as ſhe poſſeſſed a pair of fine eyes, and a clear complexion overſpread with the glow of health, which never fails of recommending the owner, he could not help gazing at her with deſire, and forming the deſign of making a conqueſt of her heart. With this view, he ſent his compliments to her huſband, whoſe name was Hornbeck, with an intimation, that he propoſed to ſet out next day for Paris, and as he underſtood that he was reſolved upon the ſame journey, he ſhould be extremely glad of his company on the road, if he was not better engaged. Hornbeck, who in all probability did not chooſe to accommodate his wife with a ſquire of our heroe's appearance, ſent a civil anſwer to his meſſage, profeſſing infinite mortification at his being unable to embrace the favour of this kind offer, by reaſon of the indiſpoſition of his wife, who, he was afraid, would not be in a condition for ſome days to bear the fatigue of travelling. This rebuff, which Peregrine aſcribed to the huſband's jealouſy, ſtifled his project in embrio; he

ordered his French servant to take a place for himself in the Diligence, where all his luggage was ſtowed, except a ſmall trunk with ſome linen and other neceſſaries that was fixed upon the poſt-chaiſe which they hired of the landlord; and early next morning he and Mr. Jolter departed from Calais, attended by his valet de chambre and Pipes on horſeback. They proceeded without any accident as far as Boulogne, where they breakfaſted and viſited old father Graham, a Scottiſh gentleman of the governor's acquaintance, who had lived as a capuchin in that place for the ſpace of threeſcore years, and during that period conformed to all the auſterities of the order, with the moſt rigorous exactneſs; being equally remarkable for the frankneſs of his converſation, the humanity of his diſpoſition, and the ſimplicity of his manners. From Boulogne they took their departure about noon, and as they propoſed to ſleep that night at Abbe Ville, commanded the poſtillion to drive with extraordinary ſpeed. Perhaps it was well for his cattle that the axle-tree gave way, and the chaiſe of courſe overturned before they had travelled one third part of the ſtage.

This accident compelled them to return to the place from whence they had ſet out, and as they could not procure another convenience, they found themſelves under the neceſſity of ſtaying till their chaiſe could be refitted. Underſtanding that this operation would detain them a whole day, our young gentleman had recourſe to his patience, and demanded to know what they would have for dinner; the garcon or waiter thus queſtioned, vaniſhed in a moment, and immediately they were ſurprized with the appearance of a ſtrange figure, which, from the extravagance of its dreſs and geſticulation, Peregrine miſtook for a madman of the growth of

France. This phantome (which, by the bye, happened to be no other than the cook) was a tall, long-legged, meagre, swarthy fellow, that stooped very much; his cheek-bones were remarkably raised, his nose bent into the shape and size of a powder-horn, and the sockets of his eyes as raw round the edges, as if the skin had been pared off. On his head he wore an handkerchief which had once been white, and now served to cover the upper part of a black periwig, to which was attached a bag, at leaſt a foot square, with a solitaire and rose that ſtuck upon each side to his ear; ſo that he looked like a criminal on the pillory. His back was accommodated with a linen waiſtcoat, his hands adorned with long ruffles of the same piece, his middle was girded by an apron tucked up, that it might not conceal his white silk stockings rolled; and at his entrance he brandished a bloody weapon full three feet in length. Peregrine, when he firſt saw him approach in this menacing attitude, put himself upon his guard, but being informed of his quality, perused his bill of fare, and having bespoke three or four things for dinner, walked out with Mr. Jolter to view both towns, which they had not leisure to consider minutely before. In their return from the harbour they met with four or five gentlemen, all of whom seemed to look with an air of dejection, and perceiving our hero and his governor to be English by their dress, bowed with great reſpect as they passed. Pickle, who was naturally compassionate, felt an emotion of sympathy; and seeing a person, who by his habit he judged to be one of their servants, accoſted him in English, and asked who the gentlemen were. The lacquey gave him to underſtand that they were his own countrymen, exiled from their native homes, in consequence of

their adherence to an unfortunate and ruined cause; and that they were gone to the sea-side, according to their daily practice, in order to indulge their longing eyes, with a prospect of the white cliffs of Albion, which they must never more approach.

Though our young gentleman differed widely from them in point of political principles, he was not one of those enthusiasts who look upon every schism from the established articles of faith, as damnable, and exclude the sceptick from every benefit of humanity and christian forgiveness: he could easily comprehend how a man of the most unblemished morals might, by the prejudice of education, or indispensible attachments, be ingaged in such a blame-worthy and pernicious undertaking; and thought that they had already suffered severely for their imprudence. He was affected with the account of their diurnal pilgrimage to the sea-side, which he considered as a pathetic proof of their affliction, and invested Mr. Jolter with the agreeable office of going to them with a compliment in his name, and begging the honour of drinking a glass with them in the evening. They accepted the proposal with great satisfaction and respectful acknowledgment, and in the afternoon waited upon the kind inviter, who treated them with coffee, and would have detained them to supper; but they entreated the favour of his company at the house which they frequented, so earnestly, that he yielded to their solicitations, and with his governor was conducted by them to the place, where they had provided an elegant repast, and regaled them with some of the best claret in France.

It was easy for them to perceive that their principal guest was no favourer of their state maxims, and there-

fore they industriously avoided every subject of conversation which could give the least offence; not but that they lamented their own situation, which cut them off from all their dearest connexions, and doomed them to perpetual banishment from their families and friends: but they did not, even by the most distant hint, impeach the justice of that sentence by which they were condemned; although one among them, who seemed to be about the age of thirty, wept bitterly over his misfortune, which had involved a beloved wife and three children in misery and distress; and in the impatience of his grief, cursed his own fate with frantic imprecations. His companions, with a view of beguiling his sorrow, and manifesting their own hospitality at the same time, changed the topic of discourse, and circulated the bumpers with great assiduity; so that all their cares were overwhelmed and forgotten, several drinking French catches were sung, and mirth and good-fellowship prevailed.

In the midst of this elevation, which commonly unlocks the most hidden sentiment, and dispels every consideration of caution and constraint, one of the entertainers being more intoxicated than his fellows, proposed a toast, to which Peregrine with some warmth excepted, as an unmannerly insult. The other maintained his proposition with indecent heat, and the dispute beginning to grow very serious, the company interposed, and gave judgment against their friend, who was so keenly reproached and rebuked for his impolite behaviour, that he retired in high dudgeon, threatening to relinquish their society, and branding them with the appellation of apostates from the common cause. Mortified at the behaviour of their companion, those that remained were earnest in their apologies to their guests, whom

they besought to forgive his intemperance; assuring them with great confidence, that he would upon the recovery of his reflection, wait upon them in person, and ask pardon for the umbrage he had given. Pickle was satisfied with their remonstrances, resumed his good humour, and the night being pretty far advanced, resisted all their importunities with which he was intreated to see another bottle go round, and was escorted to his own lodgings more than half seas over. Next morning about eight o'clock, he was waked by his valet de chambre, who told him that two of the gentlemen with whom he had spent the evening were in the house, and desired the favour of being admitted into his chamber. He could not conceive the meaning of this extraordinary visit, and ordering his man to shew them into his apartment, beheld the person who had affronted him enter with the gentleman who had reprehended his rudeness.

He who had given the offence, after having made an apology for disturbing Mr. Pickle, told him that his friend there present had been with him early that morning, and proposed the alternative of either fighting with him immediately, or coming to beg pardon for his unmannerly deportment over night; that though he had courage enough to face any man in the field in a righteous cause, he was not so brutal as to disobey the dictates of his own duty and reflection, in consequence of which, and not out of any regard to the other's menaces, which he despised, he had now taken the liberty of interrupting his repose, that he might, as soon as possible, atone for the injury he had done him, which he protested was the effect of intoxication alone, and begged his forgiveness accordingly. Our hero accepted of this acknowledgment very graciously, thanked the other gen-

tleman for the gallant part he had acted in his behalf; and perceiving that his companion was a little irritated at his officious interposition, effected a reconciliation, by convincing him that what he had done was for the honour of the company. He then kept them to breakfast, expressed a desire of seeing their situation altered for the better, and the chaise being repaired, took his leave of his entertainers, who came to wish him a good journey, and with his attendants left Boulogne for the second time.

CHAP. XXXVII.

Proceeds for the capital. Takes up his lodging at Bernay, *where he is overtaken by Mr.* Hornbeck, *whose head he longs to fortify.*

DURING this day's expedition, Mr. Jolter took an opportunity of imparting to his pupil the remarks he had made upon the industry of the French, as an undeniable proof of which he bade him cast his eyes around, and observe with what care every spot of ground was cultivated; and from the fertility of that province, which is reckoned the poorest in France, conceive the wealth and affluence of the nation in general. Peregrine, amazed as well as disgusted at this infatuation, answered that what he ascribed to industry, was the effect of meer wretchedness; the miserable peasants being obliged to plough up every inch of ground to satisfy their oppressive landlords, while they themselves and their cattle looked like so many images of famine; that their extreme poverty was evident from the face of the country, on which there was not one inclosure to be seen, or any other object, except scanty crops of barley and oats,

which could never reward the toil of the husbandman; that their habitations were no better than paultry huts; that in twenty miles of extent, not one gentleman's house appeared; that nothing was more abject and forlorn than the attire of their country people; that the equipage of their travelling chaises was infinitely inferior to that of a dung-cart in England; and that the postilion who then drove their carriage, had neither ſtockings to his legs, nor a ſhirt to his back.

The governor finding his charge ſo intractable, reſolved to leave him in the midſt of his own ignorance and prejudice, and reſerve his obſervations for thoſe who would pay more deference to his opinion: and indeed this reſolution he had often made, and as often broke, in the tranſports of his zeal, that frequently hurried him out of the plan of conduct which in his cooler moments he had laid down. They halted for a refreſhment at Montreuil, and about ſeven in the evening arrived at a village called Bernay, where while they waited for freſh horſes, they were informed by the landlord, that the gates of Abbe Ville were ſhut every night punctually at eight o'clock; ſo that it would be impoſſible for them to get admittance. He ſaid there was not another place of entertainment on the road where they could paſs the night; and therefore, as a friend, he adviſed them to ſtay at his houſe, where they would find the beſt of accommodation, and proceed upon their journey betimes in the morning.

Mr. Jolter, though he had travelled on that road before, could not recollect whether or not mine hoſt ſpoke truth; but his remonſtrance being very plauſible, our hero determined to follow his advice, and being conducted into an apartment, aſked what they could have

for supper. The landlord mentioned every thing that was eatable in the house, and the whole being engrossed for the use of him and his attendants, he amused himself till such time as it should be dressed, in ſtrolling about the house, which ſtands in a very rural ſituation. While he thus loitered away the time that hung heavy on his hands, another chaiſe arrived at the inn, and upon inquiry he found that the newcomers were Mr. Hornbeck and his lady. The landlord, conſcious of his inability to entertain this ſecond company, came and begged with great humiliation that Mr. Pickle would ſpare them ſome part of the victuals he had beſpoke; but he refuſed to part with ſo much as the wing of a partridge, though at the ſame time he ſent his compliments to the ſtrangers, and giving them to underſtand how ill the houſe was provided for their reception, invited them to partake of his ſupper. Mr. Hornbeck, who was not deficient in point of politeneſs, and extremely well diſpoſed for a reliſhing meal, which he had reaſon to expect from the ſavoury ſteam that iſſued from the kitchen, could not reſiſt this ſecond inſtance of our young gentleman's civility, which he acknowledged by a meſſage, importing that he and his wife would do themſelves the pleaſure of profiting by his courteous offer. Peregrine's cheeks glowed when he found himſelf on the eve of being acquainted with Mrs. Hornbeck, of whoſe heart he had already made a conqueſt in imagination; and he forthwith ſet his invention at work, to contrive ſome means of defeating her huſband's vigilance.

When ſupper was ready, he in perſon gave notice to his gueſt, and leading the lady into his apartment, ſeated her in an elbow chair at the upper end of the table,

squeezing her hand and darting a moſt insidious glance at the same time. This abrupt behaviour he practised on the presumption, that a lady of her breeding was not to be addressed with the tedious forms that muſt be observed in one's advances to a person of birth and genteel education. In all probability his calculation was juſt, for Mrs. Hornbeck gave no signs of discontent at this sort of treatment, but on the contrary, seemed to consider it as a proof of the young gentleman's regard; and though she did not venture to open her mouth three times during the whole repaſt, she shewed herself particularly well satisfied with her entertainer, by sundry sly and significant looks, while her husband's eyes were directed another way, and divers loud peals of laughter, signifying her approbation of the sallies which he uttered in the course of their conversation. Her spouse began to be very uneasy at the frank demeanour of his yoke-fellow, whom he endeavoured to check in her vivacity, by assuming a severity of aspect; but whether she obeyed the dictates of her own disposition, which, perhaps, was merry and unreserved, or wanted to punish Mr. Hornbeck for his jealousy of temper; certain it is, her gaiety increased to such a degree, that her husband was grievously alarmed and incensed at her conduct, and resolved to make her sensible of his displeasure, by treading in secret upon her toes. He was, however, so disconcerted by his indignation, that he miſtook his mark, and applied the sharp heel of his shoe to the side of Mr. Jolter's foot, comprehending his little toe that was studded with an angry corn, which he invaded with such a sudden jerk, that the governor, unable to endure the torture in silence, ſtarted up, and dancing on the floor, roared hideously

with repeated bellowings, to the unspeakable enjoyment of Peregrine and the lady, who laughed themselves almoſt into convulsions at the joke. Hornbeck, confounded at the miſtake he had committed, begged pardon of the injured tutor with great contrition, proteſting that the blow he had ſo unfortunately received, was intended for an ugly cur, which he thought had poſted himſelf under the table. It was lucky for him that there was actually a dog in the room, to juſtify this excuſe, which Jolter admitted with the tears running over his cheeks, and the œconomy of the table was recomposed.

As ſoon, however, as the ſtrangers could with decency withdraw, this ſuſpicious husband took his leave of the youth, on pretence of being fatigued with his journey, after having, by way of compliment, proposed that they ſhould travel together next day; and Peregrine handed the lady to her chamber, where he wiſhed her good night with another warm ſqueeze, which ſhe returned. This favourable hint made his heart bound with a tranſport of joy; he lay in wait for an opportunity of declaring himſelf, and ſeeing the husband go down into the yard with a candle, glided ſoftly into his apartment, where he found her almoſt undreſſed. Impelled by the impetuoſity of his paſſion, which was ſtill more enflamed by her preſent luſcious appearance, and encouraged by the approbation ſhe had already expreſſed, he ran towards her with eagerneſs, crying, "Zounds! madam, your charms are irreſiſtible!" and without further ceremony would have claſped her in his arms, had not ſhe begged him for the love of God to retire, for ſhould Mr. Hornbeck return and find him there, ſhe would be undone for ever. He was not ſo blinded by his paſſion, but that he ſaw the reaſonableneſs of her fear,

and as he could not pretend to crown his wishes at that interview, he avowed himself her lover, assured her that he would exhauſt his whole invention in finding a proper opportunity for throwing himself at her feet; and in the mean time he ravished sundry small favours, which she in the hurry of her fright could not withold from his impudence of address. Having thus happily settled the preliminaries, he withdrew to his own chamber, and spent the whole night in contriving ſtratagems to elude the jealous caution of his fellow-traveller.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

They set out in company, breakfaſt at Abbe Ville, *dine at* Amiens, *and about eleven o'clock arrive at* Chantilly, *where* Peregrine *executes a plan which he had concerted upon* Hornbeck.

THE whole company by agreement rose and departed before day, and breakfaſted at Abbe Ville, where they became acquainted with the finesse of their Bernay landlord, who had imposed upon them, in affirming that they would not have been admitted after the gates were shut. From thence they proceeded to Amiens, where they dined and were peſtered by begging friars; and the roads being deep, it was eleven o'clock at night before they reached Chantilly, where they found supper already dressed, in consequence of having dispatched the valet de chambre before them on horseback.

The conſtitution of Hornbeck being very much impaired by a life of irregularity, he found himself so fatigued with his day's journey, which amounted to upwards of an hundred miles, that when he sat down at table, he could scarce sit upright; and in less than three

minutes began to nod in his chair. Peregrine, who had foreseen and provided for this occasion, advised him to exhilarate his spirits with a glass of wine; and the proposal being embraced, tipt his valet de chambre the wink, who, according to the inſtructions he had received, qualified the Burgundy with thirty drops of laudanum, which this unfortunate husband swallowed in one glass. The dose co-operating with his former drowſiness, lulled him ſo faſt aſleep, as it were inſtantaneously, that it was found neceſſary to convey him to his own chamber, where his footman undreſſed and put him to bed. Nor was Jolter (naturally of a ſluggiſh diſpoſition) able to reſiſt his propenſity to ſleep, without ſuffering divers dreadful yawns, which encouraged his pupil to adminiſter the ſame doſe to him, which had operated ſo ſucceſsfully upon the other Argus. This cordial had not ſuch a gentle effect upon the rugged organs of Jolter as upon the more delicate nerves of Hornbeck; but diſcovered itſelf in certain involuntary ſtartings, and convulſive motions in the muſcles of his face; and when his nature at length yielded to the power of this medicine, he ſounded the trumpet ſo loud through his noſtrils, that our adventurer was afraid the noiſe would wake his other patient, and conſequently prevent the accompliſhment of his aim. The governor was therefore committed to the care of Pipes, who lugged him into the next room, and having ſtripped off his cloaths, tumbled him into his neſt, while the two lovers remained at full liberty to indulge their mutual paſſion.

Peregrine, in the impatience of his inclination, would have finiſhed the fate of Hornbeck immediately; but his inamorata diſapproved of his intention, and repre-

sented that their being together by themselves for any length of time, would be observed by her servant, who was kept as a spy upon her actions; so that they had recourse to another scheme, which was executed in this manner: He conducted her into her own apartment, in presence of her footman, who lighted them thither, and wishing her good reſt, returned to his own chamber, where he waited till every thing was quiet in the house; then ſtealing ſoftly to her door, which had been left open for his admiſſion in the dark, he found the husband ſtill ſecure in the embraces of ſleep, and the lady in a loose gown, ready to ſeal his happiness. He conveyed her to his own chamber; but his guilty passion was not gratified.

The opium which had been given to Jolter, together with the wine he had drank, produced such a perturbation in his fancy, that he was visited with horrible dreams, and among other miserable situations, imagined himself in danger of perishing in the flames, which he thought had taken hold on his apartment. This vision made such an impreſſion upon his faculties, that he alarmed the whole house with the repeated cries of *Fire! Fire!* and even leaped out of his bed, though he ſtill continued faſt asleep. The lovers were very disagreeably diſturbed by this dreadful exclamation, and Mrs. Hornbeck running in great confusion to the door, had the mortification to see the footman with a light in his hand, enter her husband's chamber in order to give him notice of this accident. She knew that she would be inſtantly missed, and could easily divine the conſequence, unless her invention could immediately trump up some plausible excuse for her absence.

Women are naturally fruitful of expedients in cases of such emergency; she employed but a few seconds in

recollection, and rushing directly towards the apartment of the governor, who still continued to hollow in the same note, exclaimed in a screaming tone, "Lord have mercy upon us! where! where!" By this time, all the servants were assembled in strange attire; Peregrine burst into Jolter's room, and seeing him stalking in his shirt with his eyes shut, bestowed such a slap upon his back, as in a moment dissolved his dream, and restored him to the use of his senses. He was astonished and ashamed at being discovered in such an indecent attitude; and taking refuge under the cloaths, asked pardon of all present for the disturbance he had occasioned; soliciting with great humility the forgiveness of the lady, who, to a miracle, counterfeited the utmost agitation of terror and surprize. Mean while, Hornbeck being awakened by the repeated efforts of his man, no sooner understood that his wife was missing, than all the chimera's of jealousy taking possession of his imagination, he started up in a sort of frenzy, and snatching his sword, flew straight to Peregrine's chamber, where, though he found not that which he looked for, he unluckily perceived an under petticoat, which his wife had forgot in the hurry of her retreat. This discovery added fuel to the flame of his resentment. He seized the fatal proof of his dishonour, and meeting his spouse in her return to bed, presented it to her view, saying, with a most expressive countenance, "Madame, you have dropped your under-petticoat in the next room." Mrs. Hornbeck, who inherited from nature a most admirable presence of mind, looked earnestly at the object in question, and with incredible serenity of countenance, affirmed that the petticoat must belong to the house, for she had none such in her possession. Peregrine, who

walked behind her, hearing this asseveration, immediately interposed, and pulling Hornbeck by the sleeve into his chamber, "Gads-zooks! said he, what business had you with that petticoat? Can't you let a young fellow enjoy a little amour with an innkeeper's daughter, without exposing his infirmities to your wife? Pshaw! that's so malicious, because you have quitted these adventures yourself, to spoil the sport of other people." The poor husband was so confounded at the effrontery of his wife, and this cavalier declaration of the young man, that his faith began to waver; he diſtruſted his own conscious diffidence of temper, which that he might not expose, he expressed no doubts of Peregrine's veracity, but asking pardon for the mistake he had committed, retired. He was not yet satisfied with the behaviour of his ingenious helpmate, but on the contrary determined to enquire more minutely into the circumſtances of this adventure; which turned out so little to his satisfaction, that he ordered his servant to get every thing ready for his departure by break of day; and when our adventurer rose next morning, he found that his fellow travellers were gone above three hours, though they had agreed to ſtay all the forenoon, with a view of seeing the prince of Conde's palace, and to proceed all together for Paris in the afternoon.

Peregrine was a little chagrined, when he underſtood that he was so suddenly deprived of this untaſted morsel; and Jolter could not conceive the meaning of their abrupt and uncivil disappearance, which, after many profound conjectures, he accounted for, by supposing that Hornbeck was some sharper who had run away with an heiress, whom he found it necessary to conceal from the enquiry of her friends.

The pupil, who was well assured of the true motive, allowed his governor to enjoy the triumph of his own penetration, and consoled himself with the hope of seeing his Dulcinea again at some of the public places in Paris, which he proposed to frequent. Thus comforted, he visited the magnificent ſtables and palace of Chantilly, and immediately after dinner set out for Paris, where they arrived in the evening, and hired apartments at an hotel in the Fauxbourg St. Germaine, not far from the playhouse.

CHAP. XXXIX.

He is involved in an adventure at Paris, *and taken prisoner by the city-guard. Becomes acquainted with a* French *nobleman, who introduces him into the* beau monde.

THEY were no sooner ſettled in these lodgings, than our hero wrote to his uncle an account of their safe arrival, and sent another letter to his friend Gauntlet, with a very tender billet inclosed for his dear Emilia, to whom he repeated all his former vows of conſtancy and love.

The next care that ingrossed him was that of bespeaking several suits of cloaths suitable to the French mode, and in the mean time he never appeared abroad, except in the English coffee-house, where he soon became acquainted with some of his own countrymen, who were at Paris on the same footing with himself. The third evening after his journey, he was engaged in a party of those young sparks, at the house of a noted Traiteur, whose wife was remarkably handsome, and otherwise extremely well qualified for alluring cuſtomers to her house. To this lady our young gentleman was introduced as a

ſtranger fresh from England; and he was charmed with her personal accomplishments, as well as with the freedom and gaiety of her conversation. Her frank deportment persuaded him that she was one of those kind creatures, who granted favours to the beſt bidder; on this supposition he began to be so importunate in his addresses, that the fair Burgeoise was compelled to cry aloud in defence of her own virtue. Her husband ran immediately to her aſſiſtance, and finding her in a very alarming situation, flew upon her ravisher with such fury, that he was fain to quit his prey, and turn againſt the exasperated Traiteur, whom he punished without mercy for his impudent intrusion. The lady seeing her yokefellow treated with so little reſpect, espoused his cause, and fixing her nails in his antagoniſt's face, scarified all one side of his nose. The noise of this encounter brought all the servants of the house to the rescue of their maſter, and Peregrine's company opposing them, a general battle ensued, in which the French were totally routed, the wife insulted, and the husband kicked down ſtairs.

The publican, enraged at the indignity which had been offered to him and his family, went out into the ſtreet, and implored the protection of the guet or city guard, which having heard his complaint, fixed their bayonets and surrounded the door, to the number of twelve or fourteen. The young gentlemen, flushed with their success, and considering the soldiers as so many London watchmen, whom they had often put to flight, drew their swords, and sallied out, with Peregrine at their head. Whether the guard reſpected them as foreigners, or inexperienced youths intoxicated with liquor, they opened to right and left, and gave them room to pass, without opposition. This complaisance, which was

the effect of compassion, being misinterpreted by the English leader, he out of mere wantonness attempted to trip up the heels of the soldier that stood next him, but failed in the execution, and received a blow on his breast with the butt end of a fusil, that made him stagger several paces backward. Incensed at this audacious application, the whole company charged the detachment sword in hand, and after an obstinate engagement, in which divers wounds were given and received, every soul of them was taken, and conveyed to the main-guard. The commanding officer being made acquainted with the circumstances of the quarrel, in consideration of their youth and national ferocity, for which the French make large allowances, set them all at liberty, after having gently rebuked them for the irregularity and insolence of their conduct: so that all our hero acquired by his gallantry and courage, was a number of scandalous marks upon his visage that confined him a whole week to his chamber. It was impossible to conceal this disaster from Mr. Jolter, who having obtained intelligence of the particulars, did not fail to remonstrate against the rashness of the adventure, which he observed must have been fatal to them, had their enemies been other than Frenchmen, who, of all people under the sun, most rigorously observe the laws of hospitality.

As the governor's acquaintance lay chiefly among Irish and English priests, and a set of low people who live by making themselves necessary to strangers, either in teaching the French language, or executing small commissions with which they are intrusted, he was not the most proper person in the world for regulating the taste of a young gentleman who travelled for improvement, in expectation of making a figure one day in his

own country. Being conscious of his own incapacity, he contented himself with the office of a steward, and kept a faithful account of all the money that was disbursed in the course of their family expence: not but that he was acquainted with all the places which were visited by ſtrangers on their firſt arrival at Paris; and knew to a liard what was commonly given to the Swiss of each remarkable hotel; though, with reſpect to the curious painting and ſtatuary that every where abound in that metropolis, he was more ignorant than the domeſtic that attends for a livre a day.

In short, Mr. Jolter could give a very good account of the ſtages on the road, and save the expence of Antonini's detail of the curioſities in Paris; he was a connoiſſeur in ordinaries, from twelve to five and thirty livres, knew all the rates of a Fiacre and Remise, could diſpute with a Tailleur or Traiteur upon the articles of his bill, and ſcold the ſervants in tolerable French. But the laws, cuſtoms and genius of the people, the characters of individuals, and ſcenes of poliſhed life, were ſubjects which he had neither opportunities to obſerve, inclination to conſider, nor diſcernment to diſtinguiſh. All his maxims were the ſuggeſtions of pedantry and prejudice; ſo that his perception was obſcured, his judgment biaſſed, his addreſs awkward, and his converſation abſurd and unentertaining: yet ſuch as I have repreſented this tutor, is the greateſt part of thoſe animals who lead raw boys about the world, under the denomination of travelling governors. Peregrine, therefore, being perfectly well acquainted with the extent of Mr. Jolter's abilities, never dreamt of conſulting him in the diſpoſition of his conduct, but parcelled out his time according to the dictates of his own reflection, and the information

and direction of his companions, who had lived longer in France, and consequently were better acquainted with the pleasures of the place.

As soon as he was in a condition to appear à la Françoise, he hired a genteel chariot by the month, made the tour of the Luxembourg gallery, Palais Royal, all the remarkable hotels, churches, and celebrated places in Paris; visited St. Cloud, Marli, Versailles, Trianon, St. Germain, and Fountainbleau; enjoyed the opera, masquerades, Italian and French comedy; and seldom failed of appearing in the public walks, in hopes of meeting with Mrs. Hornbeck, or some adventure suited to his romantic disposition. He never doubted that his person would attract the notice of some distinguished inamorata, and was vain enough to believe that few female hearts were able to resist the artillery of his accomplishments, should he once find an opportunity of planting it to advantage. He presented himself, however, at all the *Spectacles* for many weeks, without reaping the fruits of his expectation; and began to entertain a very indifferent idea of the French discernment, which had overlooked him so long, when one day in his way to the opera, his chariot was stopped by an *embarras* in the street, occasioned by two peasants, who having driven their carts against each other, quarrelled, and went to loggerheads on the spot. Such a rencounter is so uncommon in France, that the people shut up their shops, and from their windows threw cold water upon the combatants, with a view of putting an end to the battle, which was maintained with great fury and very little skill, until one of them receiving an accidental fall, the other took the advantage of this misfortune, and fastening upon him as he lay, began to thump the pavement

with his head. Our hero's equipage being detained close by the field of this contention, Pipes could not bear to see the laws of boxing so scandalously transgressed, and leaping from his ſtation, pulled the offender from his antagoniſt, whom he raised up, and in the English language, encouraged to a second essay, inſtructing him at the same time, by clenching his fiſts according to art, and putting himself in a proper attitude. Thus confirmed, the enraged carman sprung upon his foe, and in all appearance would have effectually revenged the injury he had suſtained, if he had not been prevented by the interposition of a lacquey belonging to a nobleman, whose coach was obliged to halt in consequence of the dispute. This footman, who was diſtinguished by a cane, descending from his poſt, without the leaſt ceremony or expoſtulation, began to employ his weapon upon the head and shoulders of the peasant who had been patronized by Pipes; upon which Thomas resenting such ungenerous behaviour, beſtowed such a ſtomacher upon the officious intermeddler, as discomposed the whole œconomy of his entrails, and obliged him to discharge the interjection Ah! with demonſtrations of great anguish and amazement. The other two footmen who stood behind the coach, seeing their fellow-servant so insolently assaulted, flew to his assiſtance, and rained a moſt disagreeable shower upon the head of his aggressor, who had no means of diversion or defence. Peregrine, tho' he did not approve of Tom's conduct, could not bear to see him so roughly handled, especially as he thought his own honour concerned in the fray, and therefore quitting his machine, came to the rescue of his attendant, and charged his adversaries sword in hand. Two of them no sooner perceived this reinforcement,

than they betook themselves to flight; and Pipes having twisted the cane out of the hands of the third, belaboured him so unmercifully, that our hero thought proper to interpose his authority in his behalf. The common people stood aghast at this unprecedented boldness of Pickle, who understanding that the person whose servants he had disciplined, was a general and prince of the blood, went up to the coach, and asked pardon for what he had done, imputing his own behaviour to his ignorance of the other's quality. The old nobleman accepted of his apology with great politeness, thanking him for the trouble he had taken to reform the manners of his domestics; and guessing from our youth's appearance that he was some stranger of condition, very courteously invited him into the coach, on the supposition that they were both going to the opera. Pickle gladly embraced this opportunity of becoming acquainted with a person of such rank, and ordering his own chariot to follow, accompanied the count to his *loge*, where he conversed with him during the whole entertainment.

He soon perceived that Peregrine was not deficient in spirit or sense, and seemed particularly pleased with his engaging manner and easy deportment, qualifications for which the English nation is by no means remarkable in France, and therefore the more conspicuous and agreeable in the character of our hero, whom the nobleman carried home that same evening, and introduced to his lady and several persons of fashion who supped at his house. Peregrine was quite captivated by their affable behaviour and the vivacity of their discourse; and after having been honoured with particular marks of consideration, took his leave, fully determined to cultivate such a valuable acquaintance.

His vanity suggested, that now the time was come when he should profit by his talents among the fair sex, on whom he resolved to employ his utmost art and address. With this view he assiduously engaged in all parties to which he had access by means of his noble friend, who let slip no opportunity of gratifying his ambition. He for some time shared in all his amusements, and was entertained in many of the best families of France; but he did not long enjoy that elevation of hope which had flattered his imagination. He soon perceived that it would be impossible to maintain the honourable connexions he had made, without engaging every day at quadrille, or in other words, losing his money; for every person of rank, whether male or female, was a professed gamester, who knew and practised all the finesse of the art, of which he was entirely ignorant. Besides, he began to find himself a meer novice in French gallantry, which is supported by an amazing volubility of tongue, an obsequious and incredible attention to trifles, a surprising faculty of laughing out of pure complaisance, and a nothingness of conversation, which he could never attain. In short, our hero, who among his own countrymen would have passed for a sprightly entertaining fellow, was considered in the brilliant assemblies of France as a youth of a very phlegmatic disposition. No wonder then that his pride was mortified at his own want of importance, which he did not fail to ascribe to their defect in point of judgment and taste: he conceived a disgust at the mercenary conduct, as well as the shallow intellects of the ladies; and after he had spent some months, and a round sum of money, in fruitless attendance and addresses, he fairly quitted the pursuit, and consoled himself with the conversation of a merry

Fille de joye, whose good graces he acquired by an allowance of twenty Louis per month. That he might the more easily afford this expence, he dismissed his chariot and French lacquey at the same time.

He then entered himself in a noted academy, in order to finish his exercises, and contracted an acquaintance with a few sensible people, whom he distinguished at the coffee-house and ordinary to which he resorted, and who contributed not a little to the improvement of his knowledge and taste; for, prejudice apart, it must be owned that France abounds with men of consummate honour, profound sagacity, and the most liberal education. From the conversation of such, he obtained a distinct idea of their government and constitution; and though he could not help admiring the excellent order and œconomy of their police, the result of all his inquiries was self-congratulation on his title to the privileges of a British subject. Indeed this invaluable birth-right was rendered conspicuous by such flagrant occurrences, which fell every day almost under his observation, that nothing but the grossest prejudice could dispute its existence.

CHAP. XL.

Acquires a distinct idea of the French *government; quarrels with a mousquetaire, whom he afterwards fights and vanquishes, after having punished him for interfering in his amorous recreations.*

AMONG many other instances of the same nature, I believe it will not be amiss to exhibit a few specimens of their administration, which happened during his abode at Paris, that those who have not the opportu-

nity of observing for themselves, or are in danger of being influenced by misrepresentation, may compare their own condition with that of their neighbours, and do justice to the constitution under which they live.

A lady of distinguished character having been lampooned by some obscure scribler, who could not be discovered, the ministry in consequence of her complaint, ordered no fewer than five and twenty abbés to be apprehended and sent to the Bastile, on the maxim of Herod, when he commanded the innocents to be murthered, hoping that the principal object of his cruelty would not escape in the general calamity; and the friends of those unhappy prisoners durst not even complain of the unjust persecution, but shrugged up their shoulders, and in silence deplored their misfortune, uncertain whether or not they should ever set eyes on them again.

About the same time, a gentleman of family, who had been oppressed by a certain powerful duke that lived in the neighbourhood, found means to be introduced to the king, who receiving his petition very graciously, asked in what regiment he served; and when the memorialist answered, that he had not the honour of being in the service, returned the paper unopened, and refused to hear one circumstance of his complaint; so that far from being redressed, he remained more than ever exposed to the tyranny of his oppressors: nay, so notorious is the discouragement of all those who presume to live independent of court-favour and connexions, that one of the gentlemen, whose friendship Peregrine cultivated, frankly owned he was in possession of a most romantic place in one of the provinces, and deeply enamoured of a country life; and yet he durst not reside upon his own estate, lest by slackening in his attendance up-

on the great, who honoured him with their protection, he should fall a prey to some rapacious intendant.

As for the common people, they are so much inured to the scourge and insolence of power, that every shabby subaltern, every beggarly cadet of the noblesse, every low retainer to the court, insults and injures them with impunity. A certain Ecuyer, or horse-dealer, belonging to the king, being one day under the hands of a barber, who happened to cut the head of a pimple on his face, he started up, and drawing his sword wounded him desperately in the shoulder. The poor tradesman, hurt as he was, made an effort to retire, and was followed by this barbarous assassin, who, not contented with the vengeance he had taken, plunged his sword a second time into his body, and killed him on the spot. Having performed this inhuman exploit, he dressed himself with great deliberation, and going to Versailles, immediately obtained a pardon for what he had done; triumphing in his brutality with such insolence, that the very next time he had occasion to be shaved he sat with his sword ready drawn, in order to repeat the murder, in case the barber should commit the same mistake. Yet so tamed are those poor people to subjection, that when Peregrine mentioned this assassination to his own trimmer, with expressions of horror and detestation, the infatuated wretch replied, that without all doubt it was a misfortune, but it proceeded from the gentleman's passion; and observed, by way of encomium on the government, that such vivacity is never punished in France.

A few days after this outrage was committed, our youth, who was a professed enemy to all oppression, being in one of the first loges at the comedy, was eye-witness of an adventure which filled him with indignation:

a tall, ferocious fellow, in the parterre, without the leaſt provocation, but prompted by the meer wantonness of pride, took hold of the hat of a very decent young man who happened to ſtand before him, and twirled it round upon his head. The party thus offended turned to his aggressor, and civilly asked the reason of such treatment; but he received no answer; and when he looked the other way, the insult was repeated: upon which he expressed his resentment as became a man of spirit, and desired the offender to walk out with him. No sooner did he thus signify his intention, than his adversary, swelling with rage, cocked his hat fiercely in his face, and fixing his hands in his sides, pronounced with the moſt imperious tone, "Heark ye, Mr. Round Periwig, you muſt know that I am a mousquetaire." Scarce had this awful word escaped from his lips, when the blood forsook the lips of the poor challenger, who with the moſt abject submission begged pardon for his presumption, and with difficulty obtained it, on condition that he should immediately quit the place. Having thus exercised his authority, he turned to one of his companions, and with an air of disdainful ridicule, told him he was like to have had an affair with a Bourgois; adding, by way of heightening the irony, "Egad! I believe he's a physician."

Our hero was so much shocked and irritated at this licentious behaviour, that he could not suppress his resentment, which he manifeſted, by saying to this Hector, "Sir, a physician may be a man of honour." To this remonſtrance, which was delivered with a very significant countenance, the mousquetaire made no other reply, but that of echoing his assertion with a loud laugh, in which he was joined by his confederates. Peregrine glowing with resentment, called him a *Fanfaron*, and withdrew in

expectation of being followed into the ſtreet. The other underſtood the hint, and a rencounter muſt have enſued, had not the officer of the guard, who overheard what paſſed, prevented their meeting by putting the mousquetaire immediately under arreſt. Our young gentleman waited at the door of the parterre, until he was informed of this interpoſition, and then went home very much chagrined at his diſappointment; for he was an utter ſtranger to fear and diffidence on thoſe occaſions, and had ſet his heart upon chaſtiſing the inſolence of this bully, who had treated him with ſuch diſreſpect.

This adventure was not ſo private but that it reached the ears of Mr. Jolter by the canal of ſome Engliſh gentlemen who were preſent when it happened; and the governor, who entertained a moſt dreadful idea of the mousquetaires, being alarmed at a quarrel, the conſequence of which might be fatal to his charge, waited on the Britiſh embaſſador, and begged he would take Peregrine under his immediate protection. His excellency having heard the circumſtances of the diſpute, ſent one of his gentlemen to invite the youth to dinner; and after having aſſured him that he might depend upon his countenance and regard, repreſented the raſhneſs and impetuoſity of his conduct ſo much to his conviction, that he promiſed to act more circumſpectly for the future, and drop all thoughts of the mousquetaire from that moment.

A few days after he had taken this laudable reſolution, Pipes who had carried a billet to his miſtreſs, informed him, that he had perceived a laced hat lying upon a marble ſlab in her apartment; and that when ſhe came out of her own chamber to receive the letter, ſhe appeared in manifeſt diſorder.

From these hints of intelligence, our young gentleman suspected, or rather made no doubt of her infidelity; and being by this time well nigh cloyed with possession, was not sorry to find that she had given him cause to renounce her correspondence. That he might therefore detect her in the very breach of duty, and at the same time punish the gallant who had the presumption to invade his territories, he concerted with himself a plan which was executed in this manner: During his next interview with his Dulcinea, far from discovering the least sign of jealousy or discontent, he affected the appearance of extraordinary fondness; and after having spent the afternoon with the shew of uncommon satisfaction, told her he was engaged in a party for Fountainbleau, and would set out from Paris that same evening; so that he should not have the pleasure of seeing her again for some days.

The lady, who was very well versed in the arts of her occupation, pretended to receive this piece of news with great affliction, and conjured him with such marks of real tenderness, to return as soon as possible to her longing arms, that he went away almost convinced of her sincerity. Determined however to prosecute his scheme, he actually departed from Paris with two or three gentlemen of his acquaintance, who had hired a Remise for a jaunt to Versailles; and having accompanied them as far as the village of Passé, returned in the dusk of the evening on foot.

He waited impatiently till midnight, and then arming himself with a case of pocket pistols, and attended by trusty Tom with a cudgel in his hand, repaired to the lodgings of his suspected inamorata. Having given Pipes his cue, he knocked gently at the door, which was

no sooner opened by the lacquey than he bolted in, before the fellow could recollect himself from the confusion occasioned by his unexpected appearance; and leaving Tom to guard the door, ordered the trembling valet to light him up ſtairs into his lady's apartment. The firſt object that presented itself to his view, when he entered the anti-chamber, was a sword upon the table, which he immediately seized, exclaiming in a loud and menacing voice, that his miſtress was false,and then in bed with another gallant, whom he would inſtantly put to death. This declaration, confirmed by many terrible oaths, he calculated for the hearing of his rival, who, underſtanding his sanguinary purpose, ſtarted up in great trepidation, and, naked as he was, dropped from the balcony into the ſtreet, while Peregrine thundered at the door for admittance; and guessing his design, gave him an opportunity of making this precipitate retreat. Pipes, who ſtood centinel at the door, observing the fugitive descend, attacked him with his cudgel, and sweating him from one end of the ſtreet to the other, at laſt committed him to the guet, by whom he was conveyed to the officer on duty in a moſt disgraceful and deplorable condition.

Mean while, Peregrine having burſt open the chamber door, found the lady in the utmoſt dread and conſternation, and the spoils of her favourite scattered about the room; but his resentment was doubly gratified, when he learnt upon enquiry, that the person who had been so disagreeably interrupted, was no other than that individual mousquetaire with whom he had quarreled at the comedy. He upbraided the nymph with her perfidy and ingratitude, and telling her that she muſt not expect the continuance of his regard, or the appointments which

she had hitherto enjoyed from his bounty, went home to his own lodgings, overjoyed at the issue of the adventure.

The soldier, exasperated at the disgrace he had undergone, as well as at the outragious insult of the English valet, whom he believed his master had tutored for that purpose, no sooner extricated himself from the opprobrious situation he had incurred, than breathing vengeance against the author of the affront, he came to Peregrine's apartment, and demanded satisfaction upon the ramparts next morning before sun-rise. Our hero assured him, he would not fail to pay his respects to him at the time and place appointed; and foreseeing that he might be prevented from keeping this engagement by the officious care of his governor, who saw the mousquetaire come in, he told Mr. Jolter, that the Frenchman had visited him in consequence of an order he had received from his superiors, to make an apology for his rude behaviour to him in the playhouse, and that they had parted very good friends. This assurance, together with Pickle's tranquil and unconcerned behaviour thro' the day, quieted the terrors which had begun to take possession of his tutor's imagination; so that the youth had an opportunity of giving him the slip at night, when he betook himself to the lodgings of a friend, whom he engaged as his second, and with whom he immediately took the field, in order to avoid the search which Jolter, upon missing him, might set on foot.

This was a necessary precaution; for as he did not appear at supper, and Pipes, who usually attended him in his excursions, could give no account of his motions, the governor was dreadfully alarmed at his absence, and ordered his man to run in quest of his master to all the

places which he used to frequent, while he himself went to the commissaire, and communicating his suspicions, was accommodated with a party of the horse-guards, who patroled round all the *environs* of the city with a view of preventing the rencounter. Pipes might have directed them to the lady, by whose information they could have learnt the name and lodgings of the mousquetaire, and if he had been apprehended, the duel would not have happened; but he did not choose to run the risk of disobliging his master, by intermeddling in the affair, and was moreover very desirous that the Frenchman should be humbled; for he never doubted that Peregrine was more than a match for any two men in France. In this confidence, therefore, he sought his master with great diligence, not with a view of disappointing his intention, but in order to attend him to the battle, that he might stand by him, and see justice done.

While this inquiry was carried on, our hero and his companion concealed themselves among some weeds that grew on the edge of the parapet, a few yards from the spot where he had agreed to meet the mousquetaire; and scarce had the morning rendered objects distinguishable, when they perceived their men advancing boldly to the place. Peregrine seeing them approach, sprung forward to the ground, that he might have the glory of anticipating his antagonist; and swords being drawn, all four were engaged in a twinkling. Pickle's eagerness had well nigh cost him his life; for, without minding his footing, he flew directly to his opposite, and stumbling over a stone, was wounded on one side of his head before he could recover his attitude. Far from being dispirited at this check, it served only to animate

him the more; being endowed with uncommon agility, he retrieved his poſture in a moment, and having parried a second thruſt, returned the longe with such incredible speed, that the soldier had not time to resume his guard, but was immediately run through the bend of his right arm; and the sword dropping out of his hand, our hero's victory was compleat.

Having dispatched his own business, and received the acknowledgment of his adversary, who with a look of infinite mortification observed, that his was the fortune of the day, he ran to part the seconds, juſt as the weapon was twiſted out of his companion's hand: upon which he took his place; and in all likelihood, an obſtinate dispute would have ensued, had they not been interrupted by the guard, at sight of whom the two Frenchmen scampered off. Our young gentleman and his friend allowed themselves to be taken prisoners by the detachment which had been sent out for that purpose, and were carried before the magiſtrate, who having sharply reprimanded them for presuming to act in contempt of the laws, set them at liberty, in consideration of their being ſtrangers, cautioning them at the same time to beware of such exploits for the future.

When Peregrine returned to his own lodgings, Pipes seeing the blood trickling down upon his maſter's neckcloth and solitaire, gave evident tokens of surprise and concern, not for the consequences of the wound, which he did not suppose dangerous, but for the glory of Old England, which he was afraid had suffered in the engagement; for, he could not help saying, with an air of chagrin, as he followed the youth into his chamber, "I do suppose as how you gave that lubberly Frenchman as good as he brought."

CHAP. XLI.

Mr. Jolter *threatens to leave him on account of his misconduct, which he promises to rectify; but his resolution is defeated by the inpetuosity of his passions. He meets accidentally with Mrs.* Hornbeck, *who elopes with him from her husband, but is restored by the interposition of the* British *embassador.*

THOUGH Mr. Jolter was extremely well pleased at the safety of his pupil, he could not forgive him for the terror and anxiety he had undergone on his account; and roundly told him, that notwithstanding the inclination and attachment he had to his person, he would immediately depart for England, if ever he should hear of his being involved in such another adventure; for it could not be expected that he would sacrifice his own quiet, to an unrequited regard for one who seemed determined to keep him in continual uneasiness and apprehension.

To this declaration Pickle made answer, that Mr. Jolter, by this time, ought to be convinced of the attention he had always paid to his ease and satisfaction; since he well knew that he had ever looked upon him in the light of a friend rather than as a counsellor or tutor, and desired his company in France, with a view of promoting his interest, not for any emolument he could expect from his instruction. This being the case, he was at liberty to consult his own inclinations with regard to going or staying; though he could not help owning himself obliged by the concern he expressed for his safety, and would endeavour, for his own sake, to avoid giving him any cause of disturbance in time to come.

No man was more capable of moralizing upon Pere-

grine's misconduct than himself; his reflections were extremely just and sagacious, and attended with no other disadvantage, but that of occurring too late. He projected a thousand salutary schemes of deportment, but, like other projectors, he never had interest enough with the ministry of his passions to bring any one of them to bear. He had in the heyday of his gallantry, received a letter from his friend Gauntlet, with a kind postscript from his charming Emilia; but it arrived at a very unseasonable juncture, when his imagination was ingrossed by conquests that more agreeably flattered his ambition; so that he could not find leisure and inclination, from that day, to honour the correspondence which he himself had solicited. His vanity had, by this time, disapproved of the engagement he had contracted in the rawness and inexperience of youth; suggesting, that he was born to make such an important figure in life, as ought to raise his ideas above the consideration of any such middling connections, and fix his attention upon objects of the most sublime attraction. These dictates of ridiculous pride had almost effaced the remembrance of his amiable mistress, or at least so far warped his morals and integrity, that he actually began to conceive hopes of her altogether unworthy of his own character and her deserts.

Mean while, being destitute of a toy for the dalliance of his idle hours, he employed several spies, and almost every day made a tour of the public places in person, with a view of procuring intelligence of Mr. Hornbeck, with whose wife he longed to have another interview. In this course of expectation had he exercised himself a whole fortnight, when chancing to be at the hospital of the invalids with a gentleman lately arrived from

England, he no sooner entered the church than he perceived this lady, attended by her spouse, who at sight of our hero changed colour and looked another way, in order to discourage any communication between them. But the young man, who was not so easily repulsed, advanced with great assurance to his fellow-traveller, and taking him by the hand, expressed his satisfaction at this unexpected meeting; kindly upbraiding him for his precipitate retreat from Chantilly. Before Hornbeck could make any reply, he went up to his wife, whom he complimented in the same manner, assuring her with some significant glances, he was extremely mortified, that she had put it out of his power to pay his respects to her on his first arrival at Paris; and then turning to her husband, who thought proper to keep close to him in this conference, begged to know where he could have the honour of waiting upon him; observing at the same time, that he himself lived *a l'academie de Palfrenier.*

Mr. Hornbeck, without making any apology for his elopement on the road, thanked Mr. Pickle for his complaisance in a very cool and disobliging manner; saying, that as he intended to shift his lodgings in a day or two, he could not expect the pleasure of seeing him, until he should be settled, when he would call at the academy, and conduct him to his new habitation.

Pickle, who was not unacquainted with the sentiments of this jealous gentleman, did not put much confidence in his promise, and therefore made divers efforts to enjoy a little private conversation with his wife; but he was baffled in all his attempts by the indefatigable vigilance of her keeper, and reaped no other immediate pleasure from this accidental meeting, than that of a kind squeeze while he handed her into the coach. How

ever, as he had been witness to some inſtances of her invention, and was no ſtranger to the favourable diſpoſition of her heart, he entertained ſome faint hopes of profiting by her underſtanding, and was not deceived in his expectation; for the very next forenoon, a Savoyard called at the academy, and put the following billet in his hand:

Coind Sur,

HEaving the playsure of meating with you at the oſpital of anvilheads, I take this lubbertea of latin you know, that I lotch at the *hottail de May cong dangle rouy Doghouseten*, with two poſtis at the gait, naytheir of um very hole, ware I shall be at the windore, if in kais you will be ſo good as to paſs that way at sicks a cloak in the heavening, when Mr. Hornbeck goes to the *Calfhay de Contea*. Prey for the loaf of Geesus keep this from the nolegs of my hussban, ells he will make me leed a hell upon urth.

Being all from, deer Sur,

Your moſt umbell sarvan wile

DEBORAH HORNBECK.

Our young gentleman was raviſhed at the receipt of this elegant epiſtle, which was directed, *A Monsr Monsr Pickhell, a la Gaddamme de Paul Freny*, and did not fail to obey the ſummons at the hour of aſſignation; when the lady, true to her appointment, beckoned him up ſtairs, and he had the good fortune to be admitted unſeen.

After the firſt tranſports of their mutual joy at meeting, ſhe told him, that her husband had been very ſurly

and cross ever since the adventure at Chantilly, which he had not yet digeſted; that he had laid severe injunctions upon her to avoid all commerce with Pickle, and even threatened to shut her up in a convent for life, if ever she should discover the leaſt inclination to renew that acquaintance; that she had been cooped up in her chamber since her arrival at Paris, without being permitted to see the place, or indeed any company, except that of her landlady, whose language she did not underſtand; so that her spirit being broke, and her health impaired, he was prevailed upon some days ago to indulge her in a few airings, during which she had seen the gardens of the Luxembourg, the Thuilleries and Palais Royal, though at those times when there was no company in the walks; and that it was in one of those excursions she had the happiness of meeting with him. Finally, she gave him to underſtand, that rather than continue longer in such confinement with the man whom she could not love, she would inſtantly give him the slip, and put herself under the protection of her lover.

Rash and unthinking as this declaration might be, the young gentleman was so much of a gallant, that he would not baulk the lady's inclinations, and too infatuated by his passion to foresee the consequences of such a dangerous ſtep; he therefore, without hesitation, embraced the proposal, and the coaſt being clear, they sallied into the ſtreet, where Peregrine calling a Fiacre, ordered the coachman to drive them to a tavern: but knowing it would not be in his power to conceal her from the search of the lieutenant de police, if she should remain within the walls of Paris; he hired a Remise, and carried her that same evening to Villejuif, about four leagues from town, where he ſtayed with her all night;

and having boarded her on a genteel pension, and settled the œconomy of his future visits, returned next day to his own lodgings.

While he thus enjoyed his success, her husband endured the tortures of the damned. When he returned from the coffee-house, and understood that his wife had eloped, without being perceived by any person in the family, he began to rave and foam with rage and jealousy, and in the fury of distraction, accused the landlady of being an accomplice in her escape, threatening to complain of her to the commissaire. The woman could not conceive how Mrs. Hornbeck, who she knew was an utter stranger to the French language, and kept no sort of company, could elude the caution of her husband, and find any refuge in a place where she had no acquaintance, and began to suspect the lodger's emotion was no other than an affected passion to conceal his own practices upon his wife, who had perhaps fallen a sacrifice to his jealous disposition. She therefore spared him the trouble of putting his menaces in execution, by going to the magistrate without any further deliberation, and giving an account of what she knew concerning this mysterious affair, with certain insinuations against Hornbeck's character, which she represented as peevish and capricious to the last degree.

While she thus anticipated the purpose of the plaintiff, her information was interrupted by the arrival of the party himself, who exhibited his complaint with such evident marks of perturbation, anger and impatience, that the commissaire could easily perceive that he had no share in the disappearance of his wife; and directed him to the lieutenant de police, whose province it is to take cognizance of such occurrences. This gentleman,

who presides over the city of Paris, having heard the particulars of Hornbeck's misfortune, asked if he suspected any individual person as the seducer of his yokefellow; and when he mentioned Peregrine as the object of his suspicion, granted a warrant and a detachment of soldiers, to search for and retrieve the fugitive.

The husband conducted them immediately to the academy, where our hero lodged, and having rummaged the whole place, to the astonishment of Mr. Jolter, without finding either his wife or the supposed ravisher, accompanied them to all the public houses in the Fauxbourg; which having examined also without success, he returned to the magistrate in a state of despair, and obtained a promise of his making such an effectual inquiry, that in three days he should have an account of her, provided she was alive, and within the walls of Paris.

Our adventurer, who had foreseen all this disturbance, was not at all surprised when his governor told him what had happened; and conjured him to restore the woman to the right owner, with many pathetic remonstrances touching the heinous sin of adultery, the distraction of the unfortunate husband, and the danger of incurring the resentment of an arbitrary government, which, upon application being made, would not fail of espousing the cause of the injured. He denied, with great effrontery, that he had the least concern in the matter, pretended to resent the deportment of Hornbeck, whom he threatened to chastise for his scandalous suspicion, and expressed his displeasure at the credulity of Jolter, who seemed to doubt the veracity of his asseveration.

Notwithstanding this confident behaviour, Jolter could not help entertaining doubts of his sincerity; and

visiting the disconsolate swain, begged he would, for the honour of his country, as well as for the sake of his own reputation, discontinue his addresses to the lieutenant de police, and apply to the British Embassador, who, by dint of friendly admonitions, would certainly prevail upon Mr. Pickle to do him all the justice in his power, if he was really the author of the injury he had sustained. The governor urged this advice with the appearance of so much sympathy and concern, promising to co-operate with all his influence in his behalf, that Hornbeck embraced the proposal, communicated his purpose to the magistrate, who commended the resolution as the most decent and desirable expedient he could use, and then waited upon his excellency, who readily espoused his cause, and sending for the young gentleman the same evening, read him such a lecture in private, as extorted a confession of the whole affair. Not that he assailed him with sour and supercilious maxims, or severe rebuke, because he had penetration enough to discern that Peregrine's disposition was impregnable to all such attacks; but he first of all rallied him upon his intriguing genius, then in an humourous manner, described the distraction of the poor cuckold, who he owned was justly punished for the absurdity of his conduct; and lastly, upon the supposition, that it would be no great effort in Pickle to part with such a conquest, especially after it had been for some time possessed, represented the necessity and expediency of restoring her, not only out of regard to his own character, and that of his nation, but also with a view to his ease, which would in a little time be very much invaded by such an incumbrance, that in all probability would involve him in a thousand difficulties and disgusts. Besides, he assured

him, that he was already, by order of the lieutenant de police, surrounded with spies, who would watch all his motions, and immediately discover the retreat in which he had deposited his prize. These arguments, and the frank familiar manner in which they were delivered, but above all, the laſt conſideration, induced the young gentleman to diſcloſe the whole of his proceedings to the embaſſador, and promiſe to be governed by his direction, provided the lady ſhould not ſuffer for the ſtep ſhe had taken, but be received by her huſband with due reverence and reſpect. Theſe ſtipulations being agreed to, he undertook to produce her in eight and forty hours; and taking coach immediately drove to the place of her reſidence, where he ſpent a whole day and a night in convincing her of the impoſſibility of their enjoying each other in that manner. Then returning to Paris he delivered her into the hands of the embaſſador, who having aſſured her, that ſhe might depend upon his friendſhip and protection, in caſe ſhe ſhould find herſelf aggrieved by the jealous temper of Mr. Hornbeck, reſtored her to her legitimate lord, whom he counſelled to exempt her from that reſtraint, which in all probability had been the cauſe of her elopement, and endeavour to conciliate her affection by tender and reſpectful uſage.

The huſband behaved with great humility and compliance, proteſting that his chief ſtudy ſhould be to contrive parties for her pleaſure and ſatisfaction. But no ſooner did he regain poſſeſſion of his ſtray-ſheep, than he locked her up more cloſely than ever; and after having revolved various ſchemes for her reformation, determined to board her in a convent, under the inſpection of a prudent abbeſs, who ſhould ſuperintend her morals, and recal her to the paths of virtue, which ſhe

had forsaken. With this view he consulted an English priest of his acquaintance, who advised him to settle her in a monastery at Lisle, that she might be as far as possible from the machinations of her lover; and gave him a letter of recommendation to the superior of a certain convent in that place, for which Mr. Hornbeck set out in a few days with his troublesome charge.

CHAP. XLII.

Peregrine *resolves to return to* England, *is diverted with the odd characters of two of his countrymen, with whom he contracts an acquaintance in the apartments of the Palais Royal.*

IN the mean time, our hero received a letter from his aunt, importing that the commodore was in a very declining way, and longed much to see him at the garison; and at the same time he heard from his sister, who gave him to understand that the young gentleman who had for some time made his addresses to her, was become very pressing in his solicitations; so that she wanted to know in what manner she should answer his repeated intreaties. These two considerations determined the young gentleman to return to his native country, a resolution that was far from being disagreeable to Jolter, who knew that the incumbent on a living which was in the gift of Trunnion, was extremely old, and that it would be his interest to be upon the spot at the said incumbent's decease.

Peregrine, who had resided about fifteen months in France, thought he was now sufficiently qualified for eclipsing most of his cotemporaries in England, and therefore prepared for his departure with infinite alac-

rity, being moreover inflamed with the moſt ardent desire of revisiting his friends, and renewing his connexions, particularly with Emilia, whose heart he, by this time, thought he was able to reduce on his own terms.

As he proposed to make the tour of Flanders and Holland in his return to England, he resolved to ſtay in Paris a week or two after his affairs were settled, in hope of finding some agreeable companion disposed for the same journey, and in order to refresh his memory, made a second circuit round all the places in that capital, where any curious production of art is to be seen. In the course of this second examination he chanced to enter the Palais Royal, juſt as two gentlemen alighted from a Fiacre at the gate, and all three being admitted at the same time, he soon perceived that the ſtrangers were of his own country. One of them was a young man, in whose air and countenance appeared all the uncouth gravity and supercilious self-conceit of a physician piping hot from his ſtudies; while the other, to whom his companion spoke by the appellation of Mr. Pallet, displayed at first sight a ſtrange composition of levity and assurance. Indeed their characters, dress and address were ſtrongly contraſted; the doctor wore a suit of black and a huge tye-wig, neither suitable to his own age, nor the fashion of the country where he then lived; whereas the other, though seemingly turned of fifty, ſtrutted in a gay summer dress of the Parisian cut, with a bag to his own gray hair, and a red feather in his hat, which he carried under his arm. As these figures seemed to promise something entertaining, Pickle entered into conversation with them immediately, and soon discovered that the old gentleman was a painter from London, who had ſtole a fortnight from his occupation, in order to

visit the remarkable paintings of France and Flanders; and that the doctor had taken the opportunity of accompanying him in his tour. Being extremely talkative, he not only communicated these particulars to our hero in a very few minutes after their meeting, but also took occasion to whisper in his ear, that his fellow traveller was a man of vast learning, and, beyond all doubt, the greatest poet of the age. As for himself, he was under no necessity of making his own elogium; for he soon gave such specimens of his taste and talents, as left Pickle no room to doubt of his capacity.

While they stood considering the pictures in one of the first apartments, which are by no means the most masterly compositions, the Swiss, who sets up for a connoisseur, looking at a certain piece, pronounced the word *magnifique!* with a note of admiration; upon which Mr. Pallet, who was not at all a critic in the French language, replied with great vivacity, "*Manufac*, you mean, and a very indifferent piece of manufacture it is; pray, gentlemen, take notice, there is no keeping in those heads upon the back ground, nor no relief in the principal figure: then you'll observe the shadings are harsh to the last degree;—and come a little closer this way—don't you perceive that the fore-shortening of that arm is monstrous—agad, sir! there is an absolute fracture in the limb—doctor, you understand anatomy, don't you think that muscle evidently misplaced? Heark ye, Mr. what d'ye call um, (turning to the attendant) what is the name of the dauber who painted that miserable performance?" The Swiss imagining that he was all this time expressing his satisfaction, sanctioned his supposed commendation, by exclaiming *sans prix*. "Right, cried Pallet, I could not recollect his name, though his manner is quite familiar to me. We have a few pieces in

England, done by that same Sangpree; but there they are in no estimation; we have more taste among us, than to relish the productions of such a miserable gout. A'n't he an ignorant coxcomb, doctor?" The physician, ashamed of his companion's blunder, thought it was necessary for the honour of his own character, to take notice of it before the stranger, and therefore answered his question, by repeating this line from Horace,

Mutato nomine, de te fabula narratur.

The painter, who was rather more ignorant of Latin than of French, taking it for granted that this quotation of his friend, conveyed an assent to his opinion, "Very true, said he, *Potatoe domine date*, This piece is not worth a single potatoe." Peregrine was astonished at this surprising perversion of the words and meaning of a Latin line, which, at first, he could not help thinking was a premeditated joke; but upon second thoughts, he saw no reason to doubt that it was the extemporaneous effect of sheer pertness and ignorance, at which he broke out into an immoderate fit of laughter. Pallet, believing that the gentleman's mirth was occasioned by his arch animadversion upon the work of Sangpree, underwent the same emotion in a much louder strain, and endeavoured to heighten the jest, by more observations of the same nature; while the doctor, confounded at his impudence and want of knowledge, reprimanded him in these words of Homer,

Siga me tis allos Achaion touton akouse muthon.

This rebuke, the reader will easily perceive, was not calculated for the meridian of his friend's intellects, but uttered with a view of raising his own character in the opinion of Mr. Pickle, who retorted this parade of learn-

ing in three verses from the same author, being part of the speech of Polydamas to Hector, importing that it is impossible for one man to excel in every thing. The self-sufficient physician, who did not expect such a repartee from a youth of Peregrine's appearance, looked upon his reply as a fair challenge, and instantly rehearsed forty or fifty lines of the Iliad in a breath. Observing that the stranger made no effort to match this effusion, he interpreted his silence into submission; then, in order to ascertain his victory, insulted him with divers fragments of authors, whom his supposed competitor did not even know by name; while Mr. Pallet stared with admiration at the profound scholarship of his companion. Our young gentleman, far from repining at this superiority, laughed within himself at the ridiculous ambition of the pedantic doctor. He rated him in his own mind as a meer index-hunter, who held the eel of science by the tail, and foresaw an infinite fund of diversion in his solemnity and pride, if properly extracted by means of his fellow-traveller's vanity and assurance. Prompted by these considerations, he resolved to cultivate their acquaintance, and, if possible, amuse himself at their expence in his journey thro' Flanders, understanding that they were determined upon the same route. In this view he treated them with extraordinary attention, and seemed to pay particular deference to the remarks of the painter, who with great intrepidity pronounced judgment upon every picture in the palace, or in other words, exposed his own nakedness, in every sentence that proceeded from his mouth.

When they came to consider the murder of the innocents by Le Brun, the Swiss observed that it was *un beau morceau*, and Mr. Pallet replied, "Yes, yes, one may see

with half an eye, that it can be the production of no other; for Bomorso's ſtile both in colouring and drapery, is altogether peculiar; then his design is tame, and his expression antic and unnatural. Doctor, you have seen my Judgment of Solomon, I think I may without presumption—but, I don't choose to make comparisons, I leave that odious task to other people, and let my works speak for themselves. France, to be sure, is rich in the arts, but what is the reason? the king encourages men of genius with honour and rewards: whereas, in England, we are obliged to ſtand upon our own feet, and combat the envy and malice of our brethren; agad! I have a good mind to come and settle here in Paris; I should like to have an apartment in the Louvre, with a snug pension of so many thousand Livres." In this manner did Pallet proceed with an eternal rotation of tongue, floundering from one miſtake to another, until it was the turn of Poussin's seven sacraments to be examined. Here again the Swiss, out of the abundance of his zeal, expressed his admiration, by saying these pieces were *impayable*; when the painter turning to him with an air of exultation, "Pardon me, friend, there you happen to be miſtaken, these are none of *Impayable*'s; but done by Nicholas Pouseen. I have seen prints of them in England, so that none of your tricks upon travellers, Mr. Swiss or Swash, or what's your name." He was very much elated by this imaginary triumph of his underſtanding, which animated him to persevere in his curious observations upon all the other pieces of that celebrated collection; but perceiving that the doctor manifeſted no signs of pleasure and satisfaction, but rather beheld them with a silent air of disdain, he could not digeſt his indifference, and asked with a waggish sneer,

if ever he had seen such a number of master-pieces before? The physician eyeing him with a look of compassion mingled with contempt, observed that there was nothing there which deserved the attention of any person acquainted with the ideas of the ancients; and that the author of the finest piece now in being, was unworthy to clean the brushes of one of those great masters, who are celebrated by the Greek and Roman writers. "O lud! O lud! (exclaimed the painter, with a loud laugh) you have fairly brought yourself into a dilemma at last, dear doctor; for it is well known that your ancient Greek and Roman artists knew nothing at all of the matter, in comparison with our modern masters; for this good reason, because they had but three or four colours, and knew not how to paint with oil: besides, which of all your old fusty Grecians would you put upon a footing with the divine Raphael, the most excellent Michael Angelo Bona Roti, the graceful Guido, the bewitching Titian, and above all others, the sublime Rubens, the"—He would have proceeded with a long catalogue of names which he had got by heart for the purpose, without retaining the least idea of their several qualifications, had not he been interrupted by his friend, whose indignation being kindled by the irreverence with which he mentioned the Greeks; he called him blasphemer, Goth, Bœotian, and in his turn, asked with great vehemence, which of those puny moderns could match with Panænus of Athens, and his brother Phidias, Polycletus of Sicyon, Polygnotus the Thrasian, Parrhasius of Ephesus, sirnamed Abrodiaitos, or *the Beau*, and Apelles, the prince of painters? He challenged him to shew any portrait of these days that could vye with the Helen of Zeuxis the Heraclean, or any compo-

sition equal to the sacrifice of Iphigenia, by Timanthes the Sicyonian; not to mention the twelve gods of Asclepiadorus the Athenian, for which Mnason, tyrant of Elatea, gave him about three hundred pounds a-piece, or Homer's hell by Nicias, who refused sixty talents, amounting to upwards of eleven thousand pounds, and generously made a present of it to his own country. He desired him to produce a collection equal to that in the Temple of Delphos, mentioned in the *Ion* of Euripides; where Hercules and his companion Iolaus are represented in the act of killing the Lernæan hydra, with golden sickles, *kruseais harpais*, where Bellerophon appears on his winged steed, vanquishing the fire-breathing chimera, *tan puripneousan*; and the war of the giants is described. Here Jupiter stands wielding the red hot thunderbolts, *Keraunon amphipuron*; there Pallas dreadful to the view, *Gorgopon*, brandisheth her spear against the huge Enceladus; and Bacchus with slender ivy rods, defeats and slays the *gas teknon*, or mighty son of earth. The painter was astonished and confounded at this rhapsody of names and instances, which was uttered with surprising eagerness and rapidity; suspecting at first that the whole was the creation of his own brain; but when Pickle, with a view of flattering the doctor's self-conceit, espoused his side of the question, and confirmed the truth of every thing he advanced, Mr. Pallet changed his opinion, and in emphatic silence adored the immensity of his friend's understanding. In short, Peregrine easily perceived that they were false enthusiasts, without the smallest pretensions to taste and sensibility; and pretended to be in raptures with they knew not what; the one thinking it was incumbent upon him to express transports on seeing the works of those who had

been moſt eminent in his profeſſion, whether they did or did not really raiſe his admiration; and the other as a ſcholar deeming it his duty to magnify the ancients above all competition, with an affected fervour, which the knowledge of their excellencies never inſpired. Indeed our young gentleman ſo ſucceſsfully accommodated himſelf to the diſpoſitions of each, that long before their review was finiſhed, he was become a particular favourite with both.

From the Palais Royal he accompanied them to the cloiſters of the Carthuſians, where they conſidered the hiſtory of St. Bruno, by Le Sueur, whoſe name being utterly unknown to the painter, he gave judgment againſt the whole compoſition, as pitiful and paultry; though in the opinion of all good judges it is a moſt maſterly performance.

Having ſatisfied their curioſity in this place, Peregrine aſked them to favour him with their company at dinner; but whether out of caution againſt the inſinuations of one whoſe character they did not know, or by reaſon of a prior engagement, they declined his invitation on pretence of having an appointment at a certain ordinary, tho' they expreſſed a deſire of being farther acquainted with him; and Mr. Pallet took the freedom of aſking his name, which he not only declared, but promiſed, as they were ſtrangers in Paris, to wait upon them next day in the forenoon, in order to conduct them to the hotel de Tholouſe, and the houſes of ſeveral other noblemen, remarkable for painting or curious furniture. They thankfully embraced his propoſal, and that ſame day made enquiry among the Engliſh gentlemen, about the character of our hero, which they found ſo much to their ſatisfaction, that upon their ſecond meeting, they

courted his good graces without reserve; and as they had heard of his intended departure, begged earnestly to have the honour of accompanying him through the Low Countries. He assured them that nothing could be more agreeable to him, than the prospect of having such fellow-travellers; and they immediately appointed a day for setting out on that tour.

CHAP. XLIII.

He introduces his new friends to Mr. Jolter, *with whom the doctor enters into a dispute upon government, which had well nigh terminated in open war.*

MEAN while, he not only made them acquainted with every thing worth seeing in town, but attended them in their excursions to all the king's houses within a day's journey of Paris; and in the course of these parties, treated them with an elegant dinner at his own apartments, where a dispute arose between the doctor and Mr. Jolter, which had well nigh terminated in an irreconcileable animosity. These gentlemen, with an equal share of pride, pedantry and saturnine disposition, were by the accidents of education and company, diametrically opposite in political maxims; the one, as we have already observed, being a bigotted high churchman, and the other a rank republican. It was an article of the governor's creed, that the people could not be happy, nor the earth yield its fruits in abundance, under a restricted clergy and limited government: whereas in the doctor's opinion, it was an eternal truth, that no constitution was so perfect as the democracy, and that no country could flourish, but under the administration of the mob.

These considerations being premised, no wonder that they happened to disagree in the freedom of an unreserved conversation, especially as their entertainer took all opportunities of encouraging and enflaming the contention. The first source of their difference was an unlucky remark of the painter, who observed that the partridge of which he was then eating, had the finest relish of any he had ever tasted. His friend owned that the birds were the best of the kind he had seen in France; but affirmed that they were neither so plump nor delicious as those that were caught in England. The governor, considering this observation as the effect of prejudice and inexperience, said, with a sarcastical smile, "I believe, sir, you are very well disposed to find every thing here inferior to the productions of your own country." "True, sir, (answered the physician with a certain solemnity of aspect) and not without good reason I hope." "And pray, (resumed the tutor) why may not the partridges of France be as good as those of England?" "For a very plain reason, replied the other, because they are not so well fed. The iron hand of oppression is extended to all animals within the French dominions, even to the beasts of the field and the fowls of the air. *Kunessin oionoisi te pasi.*" "Egad! cried the painter, that is a truth not to be controverted: for my own part, I am none of your tit-bits, one would think, but yet there's a freshness in the English complexion, a *ginseekeye*, I think you call it, so inviting to a hungry Frenchman, that I have caught several in the very act of viewing me with an eye of extreme appetite, as I passed; and as for their curs, or rather their wolves, whenever I set eyes on one of 'em, Aha! your humble servant Mr. son of a bitch, I am upon my guard in an instant. The doctor can

teſtify that their very horſes, or more properly their live carrion that drew our chaiſe, used to reach back their long necks and ſmell at us, as a couple of delicious morſels." This ſally of Mr. Pallet, which was received with a general laugh of approbation, would, in all probability have ſtifled the diſpute in embrio, had not Mr. Jolter with a ſelf-applauding ſimper, ironically complimented the ſtrangers on their talking like true Engliſhmen. The doctor, affronted at the inſinuation, told him with ſome warmth, that he was miſtaken in his conjecture, his affections and ideas being confined to no particular country; for he conſidered himſelf as a citizen of the world. He owned himſelf more attached to England than to any other kingdom, but this preference was the effect of reflection, and not of prejudice; becauſe the Britiſh conſtitution approached nearer than any other to that perfection of government, the democracy of Athens, which he hoped one day to ſee revived: he mentioned the death of Charles the firſt, and the expulſion of his ſon, with raptures of applauſe, inveighed with great acrimony againſt the kingly name; and in order to ſtrengthen his opinion, repeated forty or fifty lines from one of the Philippicks of Demoſthenes. Jolter hearing him ſpeak ſo diſreſpectfully of the higher powers, glowed with indignation. He ſaid his doctrines were deteſtable and deſtructive of all right, order, and ſociety: that monarchy was of divine inſtitution, therefore indefeaſible by any human power; and of conſequence thoſe events in the Engliſh hiſtory which he had ſo liberally commended, were no other than flagrant inſtances of ſacrilege, perfidy, and ſedition; that the democracy of Athens was a moſt abſurd conſtitution, productive of anarchy and miſchief, which muſt always happen when

the government of a nation depends upon the caprice of the ignorant hair-brained vulgar: that it was in the power of the moſt profligate member of the commonwealth, provided he was endowed with eloquence, to ruin the moſt deserving, by a desperate exertion of his talents upon the populace, who had been often persuaded to act in the moſt ungrateful and imprudent manner, againſt the greateſt patriots that their country had produced: and finally, he averred, that the liberal arts and sciences had never flourished so much in a republick, as under the encouragement and protection of absolute power; witness the Auguſtan age, and the reign of Lewis the fourteenth: nor was it to be supposed that genius and merit could ever be so amply recompensed by the individuals, or distracted councils of a commonwealth, as by the generosity and magnificence of one, who had the whole treasures at his own command.

Peregrine, who was pleased to find the conteſt grow warm, observed that there seemed to be a good deal of truth in what Mr. Jolter advanced; and the painter, whose opinion began to waver, looked with a face of expectation at his friend, who modelling his features into an expression of exulting disdain, asked of his antagoniſt, if he did not think that very power of rewarding merit, enabled an absolute prince to indulge himself in the moſt arbitrary licence over the lives and fortunes of his people? Before the governor had time to answer this queſtion, Pallet broke forth into an exclamation of "By the lord! that is certainly fact, egad! that was a home thruſt, doctor." When Mr. Jolter chaſtising this shallow intruder with a contemptuous look, affirmed that though supreme power furnished a good prince with the means of exerting his virtues, it would not support a tyrant in

the exercise of cruelty and oppression; because in all nations the genius of the people must be consulted by their governors, and the burthen proportioned to the shoulders on which it is laid. "Else, what follows?" said the physician. "The consequence is plain, replied the governor, insurrection, revolt, and his own destruction: for it is not to be supposed that the subjects of any nation would be so abject and pusillanimous, as to neglect the means which heaven hath put in their power for their own preservation." "Gadzooks! you're in the right, sir, cried Pallet, that I grant you must be confessed; doctor, I'm afraid we have got into the wrong box." This son of Pæan, however, far from being of his friend's opinion, observed with an air of triumph, that he would not only demonstrate the sophistry of the gentleman's last allegation, by argument and facts, but even confute him with his own words. Jolter's eyes kindling at this presumptuous declaration, he told his antagonist, while his lip quivered with resentment, that if his arguments were no better than his breeding, he was sure he would make very few converts to his opinion: and the doctor, with all the insolence of triumph, advised him to beware of disputes for the future, until he should have made himself more master of his subject.

Peregrine both wished and hoped to see the disputants proceed to arguments of more weight and conviction; and the painter dreading the same issue, interposed with the usual exclamation of "for God's sake, gentlemen!" when the governor rose from table in great dudgeon, and left the room, muttering some ejaculation, of which the word coxcomb only could be distinctly heard. The physician being thus left master of the field of battle, was complimented on his victory by Pe-

regrine, and so elevated by his success, that he declaimed a full hour on the absurdity of Jolter's proposition, and the beauty of the democratick administration; canvassed the whole scheme of Plato's republic, with many quotations from that ideal author, touching the το καλον: from thence he made a transition to the moral sense of Shaftesbury, and concluded his harangue with the greatest part of that frothy writer's rhapsody, which he repeated with all the violence of enthusiastic agitation; to the unspeakable satisfaction of his entertainer, and the unutterable admiration of Pallet, who looked upon him as something supernatural and divine. So intoxicated was this vain young man with the ironical praises of Pickle, that he forthwith shook off all reserve, and having professed a friendship for our hero, whose taste and learning he did not fail to extol, intimated in plain terms, that he was the only person in these latter ages, who possessed that sublime genius, that portion of the divinity or Ti Theion, which immortalized the Grecian Poets; that as Pythagoras affirmed the spirit of Euphorbus had transmigrated into his body, he, the doctor, was strangely possessed with the opinion that he himself was inspired by the soul of Pindar; because, making allowance for the difference of language, in which they wrote, there was a surprising affinity between his own works and those of that celebrated Theban; and as a confirmation of this truth, he immediately produced a sample of each, which though in spirit and versification, as different as the Odes of Horace and our present laureat, Peregrine did not scruple to pronounce altogether congenial; notwithstanding the violence he by this sentence offered to his own conscience, and a certain alarm of his pride, that was weak enough to be dis-

turbed by the physician's ridiculous vanity and presumption, which not contented with displaying his importance in the world of taſte and polite literature, manifeſted itself in arrogating certain material discoveries in the province of physick, which could not fail to advance him to the highest pinnacle of that profession, considering the recommendation of his other talents, together with a liberal fortune which he inherited from his father.

CHAP. XLIV.

The doctor prepares an entertainment in the manner of the ancients, which is attended with divers ridiculous circumſtances.

IN a word, our young gentleman, by his insinuating behaviour, acquired the full confidence of the doctor, who invited him to an entertainment, which he intended to prepare in the manner of the ancients. Pickle, ſtruck with this idea, eagerly embraced the proposal, which he honoured with many encomiums, as a plan in all reſpects worthy of his genius and apprehension; and the day was appointed at some diſtance of time, that the treater might have leisure to compose certain pickles and confections which were not to be found among the culinary preparations of these degenerate days.

With a view of rendering the physician's taſte more conspicuous, and extracting from it the more diversion, Peregrine proposed that some foreigners should partake of the banquet; and the task being left to his care and discretion, he actually bespoke the company of a French marquis, an Italian count, and a German baron, whom he knew to be egregious coxcombs, and therefore more likely to enhance the joy of the entertainment.

Accordingly, the hour being arrived, he conducted them to the hotel where the physician lodged, after having regaled their expectations with an elegant meal in the genuine old Roman taste; and they were received by Mr. Pallet, who did the honours of the house, while his friend superintended the cook below. By this communicative painter, the guests understood that the doctor had met with numerous difficulties in the execution of his design; that no fewer than five cooks had been dismissed, because they could not prevail upon their own consciences to obey his directions in things that were contrary to the present practice of their art; and that although he had at last engaged a person, by an extraordinary premium, to comply with his orders, the fellow was so astonished, mortified and incensed at the commands he had received, that his hair stood on end, and he begged on his knees, to be released from the agreement he had made: but finding that his employer insisted upon the performance of his contract, and threatened to introduce him to the commissaire, if he should flinch from the bargain, he had, in the discharge of his office, wept, sung, cursed and capered for two whole hours without intermission.

While the company listened to this odd information, by which they were prepossessed with strange notions of the dinner, their ears were invaded by a piteous voice that exclaimed in French, "For the love of God! dear Sir! for the passion of Jesus Christ! spare me the mortification of the honey and oil!" Their ears still vibrated with the sound, when the doctor entring, was by Peregrine made acquainted with the strangers, to whom he, in the transports of his wrath, could not help complaining of the want of complaisance he had found in the

Parisian vulgar, by which his plan had been almoſt entirely ruined and set aside.The French marquis, who thought the honour of his nation was concerned at this declaration, profeſſed his sorrow for what had happened, so contrary to the eſtabliſhed character of the people, and undertook to see the delinquents severely punished, provided he could be informed of their names or places of abode. The mutual compliments that passed on this occaſion were scarce finiſhed, when a servant coming into the room, announced dinner; and the entertainer led the way into another apartment, where they found a long table, or rather two boards joined together, and furniſhed with a variety of dishes, the ſteams of which had such evident effect upon the nerves of the company, that the marquis made frightful grimaces, under pretence of taking snuff; the Italian's eyes watered, the German's visage underwent violent diſtortion of features; our hero found means to exclude the odour from his sense of smelling, by breathing only through his mouth; and the poor painter running into another room, plugged his noſtrils with tobacco. The doctor himself, who was the only person then present whose organs were not discomposed, pointing to a couple of couches placed on each side of the table, told his gueſts, that he was sorry he could not procure the exact *triclinia* of the ancients, which were somewhat different from these conveniences, and desired they would have the goodness to repose themselves without ceremony, each in his reſpective couchette, while he and his friend Mr. Pallet would place themselves upright at the ends, that they might have the pleasure of serving those that lay along. This disposition, of which the ſtrangers had no previous idea, disconcerted and perplexed them in a moſt ridicu-

lous manner; the marquis and baron ſtood bowing to each other, on pretence of diſputing the lower ſeat, but in reality with a view of profiting by the example of one another, for neither of them underſtood the manner in which they were to loll; and Peregrine, who enjoyed their confuſion, handed the count to the other ſide, where, with the moſt miſchievous politeness, he inſiſted upon his taking poſſeſſion of the upper place.

In this diſagreeable and ludicrous ſuſpence they continued acting a pantomime of geſticulations, until the doctor earneſtly intreated them to wave all compliment and form, leſt the dinner ſhould be ſpoiled before the ceremonial could be adjuſted. Thus conjured, Peregrine took the lower couch on the left-hand ſide, laying himſelf gently down, with his face towards the table. The marquis, in imitation of this pattern (though he would have much rather faſted three days than run the riſk of diſcompoſing his dreſs by ſuch an attitude) ſtretched himſelf upon the oppoſite place, reclining upon his elbow in a moſt painful and aukward ſituation, with his head raiſed above the end of the couch, that the œconomy of his hair might not ſuffer by the projection of his body. The Italian, being a thin limber creature, planted himſelf next to Pickle, without ſuſtaining any misfortune, but that of his ſtocking being torn by a ragged nail of the ſeat, as he raiſed his legs on a level with the reſt of his limbs. But the baron, who was neither ſo wieldy nor ſupple in his joints as his companions, flounced himſelf down with ſuch precipitation, that his feet ſuddenly tilting up, came in furious contact with the head of the marquis, and demoliſhed every curl in a twinkling, while his own ſkull, at the ſame inſtant, deſcended upon the ſide of his couch with ſuch violence, that his peri-

wig was ſtruck off, and the whole room filled with pulvilio.

The drollery of diſtress that attended this diſaſter entirely vanquished the affected gravity of our young gentleman, who was obliged to suppress his laughter by cramming his handkerchief in his mouth; for the bareheaded German asked pardon with such ridiculous confusion, and the marquis admitted his apology with such rueful complaisance, as were sufficient to awake the mirth of a quietiſt.

This misfortune being repaired as well as the circumſtances of the occasion would permit, and every one settled according to the arrangement already described, the doctor graciously undertook to give some account of the dishes as they occurred, that the company might be directed in their choice; and with an air of infinite satisfaction thus began: "This here, gentlemen, is a boiled goose, served up in a sauce composed of pepper, lovage, coriander, mint, rue, anchovies and oil; I wish for your sakes, gentlemen, it was one of the geese of Ferrara, so much celebrated among the antients for the magnitude of their livers, one of which is said to have weighed upwards of two pounds; with this food, exquisite as it was, did the tyrant Heliogabalus regale his hounds. But I beg pardon, I had almoſt forgot the soup, which I hear is so necessary an article at all tables in France. At each end there are dishes of the salacacabia of the Romans, one is made of parsley, pennyroyal, cheese, pine-tops, honey, vinegar, brine, eggs, cucumbers, onions and hen livers; the other is much the same as the soupe-maigre of this country. Then there is a loin of veal boiled with fennel and carraway-seed, on a pottage composed of pickle, oil, honey and flour, and a curious hachis of the lights, liver and blood of an hare,

together with a dish of roasted pigeons. Monsieur le baron, shall I help you to a plate of this soup?" The German, who did not at all disapprove of the ingredients, assented to the proposal, and seemed to relish the composition; while the marquis being asked by the painter which of the *silly-kickabys* he chose, was in consequence of his desire accommodated with a portion of the soupe-maigre; and the count, in lieu of spoon-meat, of which he said he was no great admirer, supplied himself with a pigeon, therein conforming to the choice of our young gentleman, whose example he determined to follow through the whole course of the entertainment.

The Frenchman having swallowed the first spoonful, made a full pause, his throat swelled, as if an egg had stuck in his gullet, his eyes rolled, and his mouth underwent a series of involuntary contractions and dilatations. Pallet, who looked stedfastly at this connoisseur, with a view of consulting his taste, before he himself would venture upon the soup, began to be disturbed at these emotions, and observed with some concern, that the poor gentleman seemed to be going into a fit; when Peregrine assured him that these were symptoms of extacy, and for further confirmation, asked the marquis how he found the soup. It was with infinite difficulty that his complaisance could so far master his disgust, as to enable him to answer, "Altogether excellent, upon my honour!" And the painter being certified of his approbation, lifted the spoon to his mouth without scruple; but far from justifying the elogium of his taster, when this precious composition diffused itself upon his palate, he seemed to be deprived of all sense and motion, and sat like the leaden statue of some river god, with the liquor flowing out at both sides of his mouth.

The doctor, alarmed at this indecent phænomenon, earnestly inquired into the cause of it; and when Pallet recovered his recollection, and swore that he would rather swallow porridge made of burning brimstone, than such an infernal mess as that which he had tasted; the physician, in his own vindication, assured the company, that, except the usual ingredients, he had mixed nothing in the soup but some sal armoniac instead of the ancient nitrum, which could not now be procured; and appealed to the marquis, whether such a succedaneum was not an improvement on the whole. The unfortunate petit maitre, driven to the extremity of his condescension, acknowledged it to be a masterly refinement; and deeming himself obliged, in point of honour, to evince his sentiments by his practice, forced a few more mouthfuls of this disagreeable potion down his throat, till his stomach was so much offended, that he was compelled to start up of a sudden; and, in the hurry of his elevation, overturned his plate into the bosom of the baron. The emergency of his occasions would not permit him to stay and make apologies for this abrupt behaviour; so that he flew into another apartment, where Pickle found him puking, and crossing himself with great devotion; and a chair, at his desire, being brought to the door, he slipt into it more dead than alive, conjuring his friend Pickle to make his peace with the company, and in particular excuse him to the baron, on account of the violent fit of illness with which he had been seized. It was not without reason that he employed a mediator; for when our hero returned to the dining-room, the German got up, and was under the hands of his own lacquey, who wiped the grease from a rich embroidered waistcoat, while he, almost frantic with his

misfortune, stamped upon the ground, and in High Dutch cursed the unlucky banquet, and the impertinent entertainer, who all this time, with great deliberation, consoled him for the disaster, by assuring him, that the damage might be repaired with some oil of turpentine and an hot iron. Peregrine, who could scarce refrain from laughing in his face, appeased his indignation, by telling him how much the whole company, and especially the marquis, was mortified at the accident; and the unhappy salacacabia being removed, the places were filled with two pies, one of dormice liquored with syrup of white poppies, which the doctor had substituted in the room of toasted poppy-seed, formerly eaten with honey, as a desert; and the other composed of an hock of pork baked in honey.

Pallet hearing the first of these dishes described, lifted up his hands and eyes, and with signs of loathing and amazement pronounced, "A pye made of dormice and syrup of poppies; Lord in heaven! what beastly fellows those Romans were!" His friend checked him for his irreverent exclamation with a severe look, and recommended the veal, of which he himself chearfully eat, with such encomiums to the company, that the baron resolved to imitate his example, after having called for a bumper of Burgundy, which the physician, for his sake, wished to have been the true wine of Falernum. The painter seeing nothing else upon the table which he would venture to touch, made a merit of necessity, and had recourse to the veal also; although he could not help saying, that he would not give one slice of the roast beef of old England for all the dainties of a Roman emperor's table. But all the doctor's invitations and assurances could not prevail upon his guests to honour the hachis and the goose; and that course was succeeded by

another, in which he told them were divers of those dishes, which among the antients had obtained the appelation of *politeles*, or magnificent. "That which smoaks in the middle (said he) is a sow's ſtomach, filled with a compoſition of minced pork, hog's brains, eggs, pepper, cloves, garlick, anniseed, rue, ginger, oil, wine, and pickle. On the right hand ſide are the teats and belly of a ſow, juſt farrowed, fried with ſweet wine, oil, flour, lovage and pepper. On the left is a fricaſſee of ſnails, fed, or rather purged, with milk. At that end next Mr. Pallet are fritters of pompions, lovage, origanum and oil; and here are a couple of pullets, roaſted and ſtuffed in the manner of Apicius."

The painter, who had by wry faces teſtified his abhorrence of the ſow's ſtomach, which he compared to a bagpipe, and the ſnails which had undergone purgation, no ſooner heard him mention the roaſted pullets, than he eagerly ſolicited a wing of the fowl; upon which the doctor deſired he would take the trouble of cutting them up, and accordingly ſent them round, while Mr. Pallet tucked the table-cloth under his chin, and brandiſhed his knife and fork with ſingular addreſs: but ſcarce were they ſet down before him, when the tears ran down his cheeks, and he called aloud, in a manifeſt diſorder, "Z—ds! this is the eſſence of a whole bed of garlic!" That he might not, however, diſappoint or diſgrace the entertainer, he applied his inſtruments to one of the birds; and when he opened up the cavity, was aſſaulted by ſuch an irruption of intolerable ſmells, that, without ſtaying to diſengage himſelf from the cloth, he ſprung away, with an exclamation of, "Lord Jeſus!" and involved the whole table in havock, ruin, and confuſion.

Before Pickle could accompliſh his eſcape, he was

sauced with a syrup of the dormouse pye, which went to pieces in the general wreck; and as for the Italian count, he was overwhelmed by the sow's ſtomach, which burſting in the fall, discharged its contents upon his leg and thigh, and scalded him so miserably, that he shrieked with anguish, and grinned with a moſt ghaſtly and horrible aſpect.

The baron, who sat secure without the vortex of this tumult, was not at all displeased at seeing his companions involved in such a calamity as that which he had already shared; but the doctor was confounded with shame and vexation. After having prescribed an application of oil to the count's leg, he expressed his sorrow for the misadventure, which he openly ascribed to want of taſte and prudence in the painter, who did not think proper to return, and make an apology in person; and proteſted that there was nothing in the fowls which could give offence to a sensible nose, the ſtuffing being a mixture of pepper, lovage and assa fœtida, and the sauce conſiſting of wine and herring-pickle, which he had used inſtead of the celebrated garum of the Romans; that famous pickle having been prepared sometimes of the scombri, which were a sort of tunny fish, and sometimes of the silurus, or shad fish: nay, he observed that there was a third kind, called garum hæmation, made of the guts, gills and blood of the thynnus.

The physician, finding it would be impracticable to re-eſtablish the order of the banquet, by presenting again the dishes which had been discomposed, ordered every thing to be removed, a clean cloth to be laid, and the desert to be brought in.

Mean while, he regretted his incapacity to give them a specimen of the alieus, or fish meals of the ancients,

such as the jus diabaton, the conger-eel, which, in Galen's opinion, is hard of digeſtion, the cornuta, or gurnard, described by Pliny in his Natural Hiſtory, who says, the horns of many of them were a foot and a half in length; the mullet and lamprey, that were in the higheſt eſtimation of old, of which laſt Julius Cæsar borrowed six thousand for one triumphal supper. He obſerved, that the manner of dressing them was described by Horace, in the account he gives of the entertainment to which Mæcenas was invited by the epicure Nasiedenus:

Affertur squillas inter Murena natantes, &c.

And told them, that they were commonly eaten with the rhus syriacum, a certain anodyne and aſtringent seed, which qualified the purgative nature of the fish. Finally, this learned physician gave them to underſtand, that though this was reckoned a luxurious dish in the zenith of the Roman taſte, it was by no means comparable, in point of expence, to some preparations in vogue about the time of that absurd voluptuary Heliogabalus, who ordered the brains of six hundred oſtriches to be compounded in one mess.

By this time the desert appeared, and the company were not a little rejoiced to see plain olives in salt and water: but what the maſter of the feaſt valued himself upon, was a sort of jelly, which he affirmed to be preferable to the hypotrimma of Hesychius, being a mixture of vinegar, pickle and honey, boiled to a proper conſiſtence, and candied assa fœtida, which he asserted, in contradiction to Humelbergius and Liſter, was no other than the laser syriacum, so precious, as to be sold among the ancients to the weight of a silver penny. The gentlemen took his word for the excellency of this gum, but contented themselves with the olives, which gave such

an agreeable relish to the wine, that they seemed very well disposed to console themselves for the disgraces they had endured; and Pickle, unwilling to lose the leaſt circumſtance of entertainment that could be enjoyed in their company, went in queſt of the painter, who remained in his penitentials in another apartment, and could not be perſuaded to re-enter the banqueting-room until Peregrine undertook to procure his pardon from thoſe whom he had injured. Having aſſured him of this indulgence, our young gentleman led him in like a criminal, bowing on all hands with an air of humility and contrition; and particularly addreſſing himſelf to the count, to whom he ſwore in Engliſh, as God was his ſaviour, he had no intent to affront man, woman, or child; but was fain to make the beſt of his way, that he might not give the honourable company cauſe of offence, by obeying the dictates of nature in their preſence.

When Pickle interpreted this apology to the Italian, Pallet was forgiven in very polite terms, and even received into favour by his friend the doctor, in conſequence of our hero's interceſſion: ſo that all the gueſts forgot their chagrin, and paid their reſpects ſo piouſly to the bottle, that in a ſhort time the Champaigne produced very evident effects in the behaviour of all preſent.

CHAP. XLV.

The painter is perſuaded to accompany Pickle *to a maſquerade in woman's apparel; is engaged in a troubleſome adventure, and with his companion conveyed to the* Baſtile.

THE painter, at the requeſt of Pickle, who had a deſign upon the count's ſenſe of hearing, favoured the company with the ſong of *Bumper Squire Jones*,

which yielded infinite satisfaction to the baron; but affected the delicate ears of the Italian in such a manner, that his features expressed astonishment and disquiet; and by his sudden and repeated journies to the door, it plainly appeared, that he was in the same predicament with those who, as Shakespear observes, when the bagpipe sings in the nose, cannot contain their urine for affection.

With a view, therefore, of vindicating music from such a barbarous taste, Mr. Pallet had no sooner performed his task, than the count honoured his friends with some favourite airs of his own country, which he warbled with infinite grace and expression, though they had not energy sufficient to engage the attention of the German, who fell fast asleep upon his couch, and snored so loud, as to interrupt, and totally annul this ravishing entertainment; so that they were fain to have recourse again to the glass, which made such innovation upon the brain of the physician, that he sung divers odes of Anacreon to a tune of his own composing, and held forth upon the music and recitative of the ancients with great erudition; while Pallet, having found means to make the Italian acquainted with the nature of his profession, harangued upon painting with wonderful volubility, in a language which (it was well for his own credit) the stranger did not understand.

At length the doctor was seized with such a qualm, that he begged Peregrine to lead him to his chamber; and the baron being waked, retired with the count.

Peregrine being rendered frolicksome with the wine he had drank, proposed that he and Pallet should go to a masquerade, which he recollected was to be given that night. The painter did not want curiosity and inclina-

tion to accompany him, but expressed his apprehension of losing him in the ball; an accident which could not fail to be very disagreeable, as he was an utter ſtranger to the language and the town. To obviate this objection, the landlady, who was of their council, advised him to appear in a woman's dress, which would lay his companion under the necessity of attending him with more care, as he could not with decency detach himself from the lady whom he should introduce; besides, such a supposed connexion would hinder the ladies of pleasure from accoſting, and employing their seducing arts upon a person already engaged.

Our young gentleman, foreseeing abundance of diversion in the execution of this project, seconded the proposal with such importunity and address, that the painter allowed himself to be habited in a suit belonging to the landlady, who also procured for him a mask of domino, while Pickle provided himself with a Spanish dress. In this disguise, which they put on about eleven o'clock, did they, attended by Pipes, set out in a Fiacre for the ball room, into which Pickle led this supposititious female, to the aſtonishment of the whole company, who had never seen such an uncouth figure in the appearance of a woman.

After they had taken a view of all the remarkable masques, and the painter had been treated with a glass of liqueur, his mischievous companion gave him the slip, and vanishing in an inſtant, returned with another mask and a domino over his habit, that he might enjoy Pallet's perplexity, and be at hand to protect him from insult.

The poor painter having loſt his guide, was almoſt diſtracted with anxiety, and ſtalked about the room, in queſt of him, with such huge ſtrides and oddity of

gesture, that he was followed by a whole multitude, who gazed at him as a preternatural phænomenon. This attendance increased his uneasiness to such a degree, that he could not help uttering a soliloquy aloud, in which he cursed his fate for having depended upon the promise of such a wag; and swore, that if once he was clear of this scrape, he would not bring himself into such a premunire again for the whole kingdom of France.

Divers petit maitres understanding the masque was a foreigner, who in all probability could not speak French, made up to him in their turns, in order to display their wit and address, and teized him with several arch questions, to which he made no other answer than, "No *parly Francy*. Damn your chattering! Go about your business, can't ye?" Among the masks was a nobleman, who began to be very free with the supposed lady, and attempted to plunge his hand into her bosom: but the painter was too modest to suffer such indecent treatment; and when the gallant repeated his efforts in a manner still more indelicate, lent him such a box on the ear, as made the lights dance before him, and created such a suspicion of Pallet's sex, that the Frenchman swore he was either a male or hermaphrodite, and insisted upon a scrutiny, for the sake of his own honour, with such obstinacy of resentment, that the fictitious nymph was in imminent danger, not only of being exposed, but also of undergoing severe chastisement, for having made so free with the prince's ear; when Peregrine, who saw and overheard every thing that passed, thought it was high time to interpose; and accordingly, asserted his pretentions to the insulted lady, who was overjoyed at this proof of his protection.

The affronted gallant persevered in demanding to

know who she was, and our hero as ſtrenuously refused to give him that ſatisfaction: ſo that high words ensued; and the prince threatening to punish his insolence, the young gentleman, who was not supposed to know his quality, pointed to the place where his own sword used to hang, and snapping his fingers in his face, laid hold on the painter's arm, and led him to another part of the room, leaving his antagoniſt to the meditations of his own revenge.

Pallet having chid his conductor for his barbarous deſertion, made him acquainted with the difficulty in which he had been involved, and flatly telling him, he would not put it in his power to give him the slip again, held faſt by his arm during the remaining part of the entertainment, to the no small diversion of the company, whose attention was altogether engrossed in the contemplation of such an aukward, ungainly, ſtalking apparition. At laſt, Pickle being tired of exhibiting this raree-shew, complied with the repeated desires of his companion, and handed her into the coach; which he himself had no sooner entered, than they were surrounded by a file of musqueteers, commanded by an exempt, who ordering the coach-door to be opened, took his place with great deliberation, while one of his detachment mounted the box, in order to direct the driver.

Peregrine at once conceived the meaning of this arreſt, and it was well for him that he had no weapon wherewith to ſtand upon his defence; for such was the impetuosity and rashness of his temper, that had he been armed, he would have run all risks rather than surrender himself to any odds whatever; but Pallet imagining that the officer was some gentleman who had miſtaken their carriage for his own, desired his friend

to undeceive the ſtranger; and when he was informed of the real ſtate of their condition, his knees began to ſhake, his teeth to chatter, and he uttered a moſt doleful lamentation, importing his fear of being carried to ſome hideous dungeon of the Baſtile, where he ſhould ſpend the reſt of his days in miſery and horror, and never ſee the light of God's ſun, nor the face of a friend; but periſh in a foreign land, far removed from his family and connexions. Pickle damned him for his pulſilanimity, and the exempt hearing a lady bemoan herſelf ſo piteouſly, expreſſed his mortification at being the inſtrument of giving her ſuch pain, and endeavoured to conſole them, by repreſenting the lenity of the French government, and the ſingular generoſity of the prince, by whoſe order they were apprehended.

Peregrine, whoſe diſcretion ſeemed to forſake him on all ſuch occaſions, exclaimed with great bitterneſs againſt the arbitrary adminiſtration of France, and inveighed with many expreſſions of contempt, againſt the character of the offended prince, whoſe reſentment, far from being noble, he ſaid, was pitiful, ungenerous and unjuſt. To this remonſtrance the officer made no reply, but ſhrugged up his ſhoulders in ſilent aſtoniſhment at the *hardieſſe* of the priſoner, and the Fiacre was juſt on the point of ſetting out, when they heard the noiſe of a ſcuffle at the back of the coach, and the voice of Tom Pipes, pronouncing "I'll be damn'd if I do." This truſty attendant had been deſired by one of the guard to deſcend from his ſtation in the rear, but as he reſolved to ſhare his maſter's fate, he took no notice of their intreaties, until they were ſeconded by force; and that he endeavoured to repel with his heel, which he applied with ſuch energy to the jaws of the ſoldier who firſt

came in contact with him, that they emitted a crashing sound like a dried walnut between the grinders of a Templar in the pit. Exasperated at this outrage, the other saluted Tom's posteriors with his bayonet, which incommoded him so much, that he could no longer keep his post, but leaping upon the ground, gave his antagonist a chuck under the chin, and laid him upon his back, and then skipping over him with infinite agility, absconded among the crowd of coaches, till he saw the guard mount before and behind upon his master's Fiacre, which no sooner set forward than he followed at a small distance, to reconnoitre the place where Peregrine should be confined.

After having proceeded slowly through many windings and turnings to a part of Paris, in which Pipes was an utter stranger, the coach stopped at a great gate, with a wicket in the middle, which being opened at the approach of the carriage, the prisoners were admitted, and the guard returning with a Fiacre, Tom determined to watch in that place all night, that in the morning he might make such observations, as might be conducive to the enlargement of his master.

CHAP. XLVI.

By the fidelity of Pipes, Jolter *is informed of his pupil's fate. Confers with the physician. Applies to the Embassador, who with great difficulty obtains the discharge of the prisoners, on certain conditions.*

THIS plan he executed notwithstanding the pain of his wound, and the questions of the city guard both horse and foot, to which he could make no other answer than "*Anglois, Anglois*;" and as soon as it was light, tak-

ing an accurate survey of the caſtle (for such it seemed to be) into which Peregrine and Pallet had been conveyed, together with its situation in reſpect to the river, he went home to the lodgings, and waking Mr. Jolter, gave him an account of the adventure. The governor wrung his hands in the utmoſt grief and conſternation, when he heard this unfortunate piece of news; he did not doubt that his pupil was imprisoned in the Bastile for life; and in the anguish of his apprehension, cursed the day on which he had undertaken to superintend the conduct of such an imprudent young man, who had by reiterated insults provoked the vengeance of such a mild forbearing adminiſtration. That he might not, however, neglect any means in his power to extricate him from his present misfortune, he dispatched Thomas to the doctor, with an account of his companion's fate, that they might join their intereſt in behalf of the captives; and the physician being informed of what had happened, immediately dressed himself and repaired to Jolter, whom he accoſted in these words: "Now, sir, I hope you are convinced of your error, in asserting that oppression can never be the effect of arbitrary power. Such a calamity as this could never have happened under the Athenian democracy: nay, even when the tyrant Pisistratus got possession of that commonwealth, he durſt not venture to rule with such absolute and unjuſt dominion. You shall see now that Mr. Pickle and my friend Pallet will fall a sacrifice to the tyranny of lawless power; and in my opinion, we shall be accessary to the ruin of this poor enslaved people, if we beſtir ourselves in demanding, or imploring the release of our unhappy countrymen; as we may thereby prevent the commission of a flagrant crime, which would fill up the vengeance of

heaven againſt the perpetrators, and perhaps be the means of reſtoring a whole nation to the unſpeakable fruition of freedom. For my own part, I ſhould rejoice to ſee the blood of my father ſpilt in ſuch a glorious cauſe, provided ſuch a victim would furniſh me with the opportunity of diſſolving the chains of ſlavery, and vindicating that liberty which is the birth-right of man. Then would my name be immortalized among the patriot heroes of antiquity, and my memory like that of Harmodius and Ariſtogiton, be honoured by ſtatues erected at the public expence." This rhapſody, which was delivered with great emphaſis and agitation, gave ſo much offence to Jolter, that without ſpeaking one word, he retired in great wrath to his own chamber, and the republican returned to his lodging, in full hope of his prognoſtic being verified in the death and deſtruction of Peregrine and the painter, which muſt give riſe to ſome renowned revolution, wherein he himſelf would act a principal part. But the governor, whoſe imagination was not quite ſo warm and prolific, went directly to the Embaſſador, whom he informed of his pupil's ſituation, and beſought to interpoſe with the French miniſtry, that he and the other Britiſh ſubject might obtain their liberty.

His excellency aſked if Jolter could gueſs at the cauſe of his impriſonment, that he might be the better prepared to vindicate or excuſe his conduct; but neither he nor Pipes could give the ſmalleſt hint of intelligence on that ſubject; though he furniſhed himſelf from Tom's own mouth with a circumſtantial account of the manner in which his maſter had been arreſted, as well as of his own behaviour, and the diſaſter he had received on that occaſion. His Lordſhip never doubted that Pickle had

brought this calamity upon himself by some unlucky prank he had played at the masquerade; especially when he understood that the young gentleman had drank freely in the afternoon, and been so whimsical as to go thither with a man in woman's apparel; and he that same day waited on the French minister, in full confidence of obtaining his discharge; but met with more difficulty than he expected, the court of France being extremely punctilious in every thing that concerns a prince of the blood; the Embassador was, therefore, obliged to talk in very high terms, and though the present circumstances of the French politicks would not allow them to fall out with the British administration for trifles, all the favour he could procure, was a promise that Pickle should be set at liberty, provided he would ask pardon of the Prince to whom he had given offence. His excellency thought this was but a reasonable condescension, supposing Peregrine to have been in the wrong; and Jolter was admitted to him in order to communicate and reinforce his Lordship's advice, which was that he should comply with the terms proposed. The governor, who did not enter this gloomy fortress without fear and trembling, found his pupil in a dismal apartment void of all furniture, but a stool and truckle-bed; the moment he was admitted, he perceived the youth whistling with great unconcern and working with his pencil at the bare wall, on which he had delineated a ludicrous figure labelled with the name of the nobleman whom he had affronted, and an English mastiff with his leg lifted up, in the attitude of making water in his shoe. He had been even so presumptuous as to explain the device with satirical inscriptions in the French language, which when Jolter perused, his hair stood on

end with affright. The very turnkey was confounded and overawed by the boldness of his behaviour, which he had never seen matched by any inhabitant of that place; and actually joined his friend in persuading him to submit to the easy demand of the minister. But our hero, far from embracing the counsel of this advocate, handed him to the door with great ceremony, and dismissed him with a kick on the breech; and to all the supplications, and even tears of Jolter, made no other reply, than that he would stoop to no condescension, because he had committed no crime; but would leave his case to the cognizance and exertion of the British court, whose duty it was to see justice done to its own subjects: he desired, however, that Pallet, who was confined in another place, might avail himself of his own disposition, which was sufficiently pliable. But when the governor desired to see his fellow-prisoner, the turnkey gave him to understand that he had received no orders relating to the lady, and therefore could not admit him into her apartment; though he was complaisant enough to tell him that she seemed very much mortified at her confinement, and at certain times behaved as if her brain was not a little disordered. Jolter thus baffled in all his endeavours, quitted the Bastile with a heavy heart, and reported his fruitless negociation to the Embassador, who could not help breaking forth into some acrimonious expressions against the obstinacy and insolence of the young man, who, he said, deserved to suffer for his folly. Nevertheless he did not desist from his representations to the French ministry, which he found so unyielding, that he was obliged to threaten in plain terms, to make it a national concern; and not only write to his court for instructions, but even advise the council to make re-

prisals, and send some French gentleman in London to the Tower.

This intimation had an effect upon the ministry at Versailles, who rather than run the risk of incensing a people whom it was neither their interest nor inclination to disoblige, consented to discharge the offenders, on condition that they should leave Paris in three days after their enlargement. This proposal was readily agreed to by Peregrine, who was now a little more tractable, and heartily tired of being cooped up in such an uncomfortable abode, for the space of three long days, without any sort of communication or entertainment, but that which his own imagination suggested.

CHAP. XLVII.

Peregrine *makes himself merry at the expence of the painter, who curses his landlady, and breaks with the doctor.*

AS he could easily conceive the situation of his companion in adversity, he was unwilling to leave the place, until he had reaped some diversion from his distress, and with that view repaired to the dungeon of the afflicted painter, to which he had by this time free access. When he entered, the first object that presented itself to his eye, was so uncommonly ridiculous, that he could scarce preserve that gravity of countenance which he had affected in order to execute the joke he had planned. The forlorn Pallet sat upright in his bed in a dishabille that was altogether extraordinary. He had laid aside his monstrous hoop, together with his stays, gown and petticoat, wrapped his lappets about his head by way of night-cap, and wore his domino as a loose morning dress; his grizzled locks hung down about his lack-

luſtre eyes and tawny neck, in all the disorder of negligence; his grey beard briſtled about half an inch, through the remains of the paint with which his visage had been bedaubed, and every feature of his face was lengthened to the moſt ridiculous expression of grief and dismay. Seeing Peregrine come in, he ſtarted up in a sort of frantic extasy, and running towards him with open arms, no sooner perceived the woeful appearance into which our hero had modelled his physiognomy, then he ſtopped short all of a sudden, and the joy which had begun to take possession of his heart, was in a moment dispelled by the moſt rueful presages; so that he ſtood in a moſt ludicrous poſture of dejection, like a malefactor at the Old Baily, when sentence is about to be pronounced. Pickle taking him by the hand, heaved a profound sigh, and after having proteſted that he was extremely mortified at being pitched upon as the messenger of bad news, told him with an air of sympathy and infinite concern, that the French court having discovered his sex, and resolved, in consideration of the outragious indignity he offered in public to a prince of the blood, to detain him in the Baſtile a prisoner for life: and that this sentence was a mitigation obtained by the importunities of the British Embassador; the punishment ordained by law being no other than breaking alive upon the wheel. These tidings aggravated the horrors of the painter to such a degree, that he roared aloud, and skipped about the room, in all the extravagance of diſtraction; taking God and man to witness that he would rather suffer immediate death, than endure one year's imprisonment in such a hideous place; and cursing the hour of his birth, and the moment on which he departed from his own country. "For my own part, (said his tormentor in a hypocritical tone)

I was obliged to swallow the bitter pill of making submissions to the prince, who, as I had not presumed to ſtrike him, received acknowledgments, in consequence of which, I shall be this day set at liberty; and there is even one expedient left for the recovery of your freedom. It is, I own, a disagreeable remedy, but one had better undergo a little mortification, than be for ever wretched. Besides, upon second thoughts, I begin to imagine, that you will not for such a trifle sacrifice yourself to the unceasing horrors of a solitary dungeon; especially as your condescension will in all probability be attended with advantages which you could not otherwise enjoy." Pallet interrupting him with great eagerness, begged for the love of God that he would no longer keep him in the torture of suspence, but mention that same remedy, which he was resolved to swallow, let it be never so unpalatable.

Peregrine having thus played upon his passions of fear and hope, answered, "that as the offence was committed in the habit of a woman, which was a disguise unworthy of the other sex; the French court was of opinion that the delinquent should be reduced to the neuter gender; so that there was an alternative at his own option, by which he had it in his power to regain immediate freedom." "What! cried the painter in despair, become a singer? Gadzooks! and the devil and all that, I'll rather lie ſtill where I am, and let myself be devoured by vermin." Then thruſting out his throat, "Here is my windpipe, (said he) be so good, my dear friend, as to give it a slice or two; if you don't, I shall one of these days be found dangling in my garters. What an unfortunate rascal I am! What a blockhead, and a beaſt, and a fool was I to truſt myself among such a barbarous ruffian race?

Lord forgive you, Mr. Pickle, for having been the immediate cause of my disaſter; if you had ſtood by me from the beginning, according to your promiſe, I ſhould not have been teized by that coxcomb who has brought me to this paſs. And why did I put on this damn'd unlucky dreſs? Lard curſe that chattering Jezabel of a landlady, who adviſed ſuch a prepoſterous diſguiſe! a diſguiſe which hath not only brought me to this paſs, but alſo rendered me abominable to myſelf, and frightful to others; for, when I this morning ſignified to the turnkey, that I wanted to be ſhaved, he looked at my beard with aſtoniſhment, and croſſing himſelf, muttered his pater-noſter, believing me (I ſuppoſe) to be a witch, or ſomething worſe. And heaven confound that loathſome banquet of the ancients, which provoked me to drink too freely, that I might waſh away the taſte of that accurſed ſillikicaby."

Our young gentleman, having heard his lamentation to an end, excuſed himſelf for his conduct, by repreſenting, that he could not poſſibly foreſee the diſagreeable conſequences that attended it; and in the mean time, ſtrenuouſly counſelled him to ſubmit to the terms of this enlargement. He obſerved, that he was now arrived at that time of life, when the luſts of the fleſh ſhould be entirely mortified within him, and his greateſt concern ought to be the health of his ſoul, to which nothing could more effectually contribute than the amputation which was propoſed: that his body, as well as his mind, would profit by the change, becauſe he would have no dangerous appetite to gratify, and no carnal thoughts to divert him from the duties of his profeſſion; and his voice, which was naturally ſweet, would improve to ſuch a degree, that he would captivate the ears

of all the people of fashion and taſte, and in a little time be celebrated under the appellation of the English Senesino.

These arguments did not fail to make impreſſion upon the painter, who, nevertheleſs, ſtarted two objections to his compliance; namely, the diſgrace of the puniſhment, and the dread of his wife. Pickle undertook to obviate theſe difficulties, by aſſuring him, that the ſentence would be executed ſo privately, as never to tranſpire; and that his wife could not be ſo unconſcionable, after ſo many years of cohabitation, as to take exceptions to an expedient, by which ſhe would not only enjoy the converſation of her huſband, but even the fruits of thoſe talents which the knife would ſo remarkably refine.

Pallet ſhook his head at his laſt remonſtrance, as if he thought it would not be altogether convincing to his ſpouſe; but yielded to the propoſal, provided her conſent could be obtained. Juſt as he ſignified this condeſcenſion, the gaoler entered, and addreſſing himſelf to the ſuppoſed lady, expreſſed his ſatisfaction in having the honour to tell her, that ſhe was no longer a priſoner. As the painter did not underſtand one word of what he ſaid, Peregrine undertook the office of interpreter, and made his friend believe, the gaoler's ſpeech was no other than an intimation, that the miniſtry had ſent a ſurgeon to execute what was propoſed, and that the inſtruments and dreſſings were prepared in the next room. Alarmed and terrified at this ſudden appointment, he flew to the other end of the room, and ſnatching up an earthen chamber-pot, which was the only offenſive weapon in the place, put himſelf in a poſture of defiance, and with

many oaths threatened to try the temper of the barber's skull, if he should presume to set his nose within the apartment.

The gaoler, who little expected such a reception, concluded that the poor gentlewoman had actually lost her wits, and retreated with precipitation, leaving the door open as he went out. Upon which Pickle, gathering up the particulars of his dress with great dispatch, crammed them into Pallet's arms, and taking notice that now the coast was clear, exhorted him to follow his footsteps to the gate, where a hackney coach stood for his reception. There being no time for hesitation, the painter took his advice, and without quitting the utensil, which in his hurry he forgot to lay down, sallied out in the rear of our hero, with all that wildness of terror and impatience which may be reasonably supposed to take possession of a man who flies from perpetual imprisonment. Such was the tumult of his agitation, that his faculty of thinking was for the present utterly overwhelmed, and he saw no object but his conductor, whom he followed by a sort of instinctive impulse, without regarding the keepers and centinels, who, as he passed with his cloaths under one arm, and his chamber-pot brandished above his head, were confounded, and even dismayed at the strange apparition.

During the whole course of this irruption, he ceased not to cry with great vociferation, "Drive, coachman, drive in the name of God!" And the carriage had proceeded the length of a whole street, before he manifested the least sign of reflection, but stared like the Gorgon's head, with his mouth wide open, and each particular hair crawling and twining like an animated serpent. At length, however, he began to recover the use of his sen-

ses, and asked if Peregrine thought him now out of all danger of being retaken. This unrelenting wag, not yet satisfied with the affliction he had imposed upon the sufferer, answered with an air of doubt and concern, that he hoped they would not be overtaken, and prayed to God they might not be retarded by a ſtop of carriages. Pallet fervently joined in this ſupplication, and they advanced a few yards further, when the noiſe of a coach at full ſpeed behind them, invaded their ears; and Pickle having looked out of the window, withdrew his head in ſeeming confuſion and exclaimed, "Lord have mercy upon us! I wiſh that may not be a guard ſent after us. Methinks I ſaw the muzzle of a fuſil ſticking out of the coach." The painter hearing theſe tidings, that inſtant thruſt himſelf half out at the window, with his helmet ſtill in his hand, bellowing to the coachman as loud as he could roar, "Drive, damn ye drive! to the gates of Jericho and ends of the earth! Drive, you raggamuffin, you raſcallion, you hell-hound! drive us to the pit of hell rather than we ſhould be taken."

Such a phantom could not paſs, without attracting the curioſity of the people, who ran to their doors and windows, in order to behold this object of admiration. With the ſame view that coach, which was ſuppoſed to be in purſuit of him, ſtopt juſt as the windows of each happened to be oppoſite; and Pallet looking behind, and ſeeing three men ſtanding upon the foot-board armed with canes, which his fear converted into fuſils, never doubted that his friend's ſuſpicion was juſt; but, ſhaking his jordan at the imaginary guard, ſwore he would ſooner die than part with his precious ware. The owner of the coach, who was a nobleman of the firſt quality, miſtook him for ſome unhappy woman deprived of her

senses; and ordering his coachman to proceed, convinced the fugitive, to his infinite joy, that this was no more than a false alarm. He was not, for all that, freed from anxiety and trepidation; but our young gentleman, fearing his brain would not bear a repetition of the same joke, permitted him to gain his own lodgings, without further moleſtation.

His landlady meeting him on the ſtair, was ſo affected at his appearance, that ſhe screamed aloud, and betook herſelf to flight; while he, curſing her with great bitterneſs, rushed into the apartment with the doctor, who, inſtead of receiving him with cordial embraces, and congratulating him upon his deliverance, gave evident tokens of umbrage and diſcontent; and even plainly told him, he hoped to have heard that he and Mr. Pickle had acted the glorious part of Cato; an event which would have laid the foundation of ſuch noble ſtruggles, as could not fail to end in happineſs and freedom; and that he had already made ſome progreſs in an ode that would have immortalized their names, and inſpired the flame of liberty in every honeſt breaſt. "There (ſaid he) I would have proved, that great talents, and high ſentiments of liberty, do reciprocally produce and aſſiſt each other; and illuſtrated my aſſertions with ſuch notes and quotations from the Greek writers, as would have opened the eyes of the moſt blind and unthinking, and touched the moſt callous and obdurate heart. *O fool! to think the man, whoſe ample mind muſt graſp whatever yonder ſtars ſurvey*— Pray, Mr. Pallet, what is your opinion of that image of the mind's graſping the whole univerſe? For my own part, I can't help thinking it the moſt happy conception that ever entered my imagination."

The painter, who was not such a flaming enthusiaſt in the cause of liberty, could not brook the doctor's reflections, which he thought savoured a little too much of indifference and deficiency in point of private friendship; and therefore seized the present opportunity of mortifying his pride, by observing, that the image was, without all doubt, very grand and magnificent; but that he had been obliged for the idea to Mr. Bayes in *The Rehearsal*, who values himself upon the same figure, conveyed in these words, *But all these clouds, when by the eye of reason grasp'd*, &c. Upon any other occasion, the painter would have triumphed greatly in this detection; but such was the flutter and confusion of his spirits, under the apprehension of being retaken, that without further communication, he retreated to his own room, in order to resume his own dress, which he hoped would alter his appearance in such a manner, as to baffle all search and examination; while the physician remained ashamed and abashed, to find himself convicted of Bombaſt by a person of such contemptible talents. He was offended at this proof of his memory, and so much enraged at his presumption in exhibiting it, that he could never forgive his want of reverence, and took every opportunity of exposing his ignorance and folly in the sequel. Indeed, the ties of private affection were too weak to engage the heart of this republican, whose zeal for the community had entirely swallowed up his concern for individuals. He looked upon particular friendship as a passion unworthy of his ample soul, and was a professed admirer of L. Manlius, Junius Brutus, and those later patriots of the same name, who shut their ears againſt the cries of nature, and resiſted all the dictates of gratitude and humanity.

CHAP. XLVIII.

Pallet *conceives an hearty contempt for his fellow-traveller, and attaches himself to* Pickle, *who, nevertheless, persecutes him with his mischievous talent, upon the road to* Flanders.

IN the mean time, his companion having employed divers pails full of water, in cleansing himself from the squalor of a jail, submitted his face to the barber, tinged his eye-brows with a sable hue, and being dressed in his own cloaths, ventured to visit Peregrine, who was ſtill under the hands of his valet de chambre, and who gave him to underſtand, that his escape had been connived at, and that the condition of their deliverance was their departure from Paris in three days.

The painter was transported with joy, when he learnt that he ran no risque of being retaken; and far from repining at the terms of his enlargement, would have willingly set out on his return to England that same afternoon; for the Baſtile had made such an impression upon him, that he ſtarted at the sound of every coach, and turned pale at sight of a French soldier. In the fullness of his heart, he complained of the doctor's indifference, and related what had passed at their meeting with evident marks of resentment and disreſpect; which were not at all diminished, when Jolter informed him of the physician's behaviour when he sent for him, to confer about the means of abridging their confinement. Pickle himself was incensed at his want of bowels, and perceiving how much he had sunk in the opinion of his fellow-traveller, resolved to encourage these sentiments of diſguſt, and occasionally foment the division to a downright quarrel, which he foresaw would produce some

diversion, and perhaps expose the poet's character in such a light, as would effectually punish him for his arrogance and barbarity. With this view, he levelled several satirical jokes at the doctor's pedantry and want of taste, which had appeared so conspicuous in the quotations he had got by heart, from ancient authors, in his affected disdain of the best pictures in the world; which, had he been endowed with the least share of discernment, he could not have beheld with such insensibility; and lastly, in his ridiculous banquet, which none but an egregious coxcomb, devoid of all elegance and sense, would have prepared, or presented to rational beings. In a word, our young gentleman played the artillery of his wit against him with such success, that the painter seemed to wake from a dream, and went home with the most hearty contempt for the person he had formerly adored.

Instead of using the privilege of a friend, to enter his apartment without ceremony, he sent in his servant with a message, importing, that he intended to set out from Paris next day, in company with Mr. Pickle, and desiring to know whether or not he was, or would be prepared for the journey. The doctor, struck with the manner, as well as the matter, of this intimation, went immediately to Pallet's room, and demanded to know the cause of such a sudden determination, without his privity or concurrence; and when he understood the necessity of their affairs, rather than travel by himself, he ordered his baggage to be packed up, and signified his readiness to conform to the emergency of the case; though he was not at all pleased with the cavalier behaviour of Pallet, to whom he threw out some hints of his own importance, and the immensity of his condes-

cension, in favouring him with such marks of regard. But by this time these insinuations had loſt their effect upon the painter, who told him, with an arch sneer, that he did not at all queſtion his learning and abilities, and particularly his skill in cookery, which he should never forget while his palate retained its function; but nevertheless advised him, for the sake of the degenerate eaters of these days, to spare a little of his sal armoniac in the next sillykickaby he should prepare; and bate somewhat of the devil's dung, which he had so plentifully crammed into the roaſted fowls, unless he had a mind to convert his gueſts into patients, with a view of licking himself whole for the expence of the entertainment.

The physician, nettled at these sarcasms, eyed him with a look of indignation and disdain; and being unwilling to express himself in English, leſt, in the course of the altercation, Pallet should be so much irritated as to depart without him, he vented his anger in Greek. The painter, though by the sound he supposed this quotation to be Greek, complimented his friend upon his knowledge in the Welch language, and found means to rally him quite out of temper; so that he retired to his own chamber in the utmoſt wrath and mortification, and left his antagoniſt exulting o'er the victory he had won.

While these things passed between these originals, Peregrine waited upon the Embassador, whom he thanked for his kind interposition, acknowledging the indiscretion of his own conduct, with such appearance of conviction, and promises of reformation, that his excellency freely forgave him for all the trouble he had been put to on his account, fortified him with sensible advices, and assuring him of his continual favour and friendship, gave him, at parting, letters of introduction

to several persons of quality belonging to the British court.

Thus diſtinguished, our young gentleman took leave of all his French acquaintance, and ſpent the evening with ſome of thoſe who had enjoyed the greateſt ſhare of his intimacy and confidence; while Jolter ſuperintended his domeſtic concerns, and with infinite joy beſpoke a poſt-chaiſe and horſes, in order to convey him from a place where he lived in continual apprehenſion of ſuffering by the dangerous diſpoſition of his pupil. Every thing being adjuſted according to their plan, they and their fellow-travellers next day dined together, and about four in the afternoon took their departure in two chaiſes, eſcorted by the valet de chambre, Pipes and the doctor's lacquey on horſeback, well furniſhed with arms and ammunition, in caſe of being attacked by robbers on the road.

It was about eleven o'clock at night when they arrived at Senlis, which was the place at which they propoſed to lodge, and where they were obliged to knock up the people of the inn, before they could have their ſupper prepared. All the proviſion in the houſe was but barely ſufficient to furniſh one indifferent meal; however, the painter conſoled himſelf for the quantity with the quality of the diſhes, one of which was a fricaſſee of rabbit, a preparation that he valued above all the dainties that ever ſmoaked upon the table of the ſumptuous Heliogabalus.

He had no ſooner expreſſed himſelf to this effect, than our hero, who was almoſt inceſſantly laying traps for diverſion at his neighbour's expence, laid hold on the declaration; and recollecting the ſtory of Scipio and the muleteer in Gil Blas, reſolved to perpetrate a joke upon the ſtomach of Pallet, which ſeemed particularly

well disposed to an hearty supper. He accordingly digested his plan; and the company being seated at table, affected to gaze with peculiar eagerness at the painter, who had helped himself to a large portion of the fricassee, and began to swallow it with infinite relish. Pallet, notwithstanding the keenness of his appetite, could not help taking notice of Pickle's demeanour; and making a short pause in the exercise of his grinders, "You are surprised (said he) to see me make so much dispatch; but I was extremely hungry, and this is one of the best fricassees I ever tasted: the French are very expert in these dishes, that I must allow; and, upon my conscience, I would never desire to eat a more delicate rabbit than this that lies upon my plate."

Peregrine made no other reply to this encomium, than the repetition of the word rabbit! with a note of admiration, and such a significant shake of the head, as effectually alarmed the other, who instantly suspended the action of his jaws, and with the morsel half chewed in his mouth, stared round him with a certain stolidity of apprehension, which is easier conceived than described, until his eyes encountered the countenance of Thomas Pipes, who being instructed, and posted opposite to him for the occasion, exhibited an arch grin, that completed the painter's disorder. Afraid of swallowing his mouthful, and ashamed to dispose of it any other way, he sat some time in a most distressed state of suspence; and being questioned by Mr. Jolter touching his calamity, made a violent effort of the muscles of his gullet, which with difficulty performed their office; and then, with great confusion and concern, asked if Mr. Pickle suspected the rabbit's identity. The young gentleman assuming a mysterious air, pretended ignorance of the

matter; observing, that he was apt to ſuſpect all dishes of that kind, since he had been informed of the tricks which were commonly played at inns in France, Italy, and Spain; and recounted that passage in Gil Blas, which we have hinted at above; saying, he did not pretend to be a connoisseur in animals, but the legs of the creature which composed that fricassee did not, in his opinion, resemble those of the rabbits he had usually seen. This observation had an evident effect upon the features of the painter, who, with certain signs of loathing and aſtonishment, exclaimed, "Lord Jesus!" and appealed to Pipes for a discovery of the truth, by asking if he knew any thing of the affair. Tom very gravely replied, that he did suppose the food was wholesome enough, for he had seen the skin and feet of a special ram-cat, new flea'd, hanging upon the door of a small pantry adjoining to the kitchen.

Before this sentence was uttered, Pallet's belly seemed to move in contact with his back-bone, his colour changed, no part but the whites of his eyes were to be seen, he dropped his lower jaw, and fixing his hands in his sides, reached with such convulsive agonies, as amazed and disconcerted the whole company; and what augmented his disorder was the tenacious retention of his ſtomach, which absolutely refused to part with its contents, notwithſtanding all the energy of his abhorrence, which threw him into a cold sweat, and almoſt into a swoon.

Pickle, alarmed at his condition, assured him it was a genuine rabbit, and that he had tutored Pipes to say otherwise for the joke's sake. But this confession he considered as a friendly artifice of Pickle's compassion, and therefore it had little effect upon his conſtitution. By the aſſiſtance, however, of a large bumper of brandy, his

spirits were recruited, and his recollection so far recovered, that he was able to declare, with divers contortions of face, that the dish had a particular rankness of taste, which he had imputed partly to the nature of the French coney, and partly to the composition of their sauces; then he inveighed against the infamous practices of French publicans, attributing such imposition to their oppressive government, which kept them so necessitous, that they were tempted to exercise all manner of knavery upon their unwary guests.

Jolter, who could not find in his heart to let slip any opportunity of speaking in favour of the French, told him "that he was a very great stranger to their police, else he would know, that if upon information to the magistrate, it should appear that any traveller, native or foreigner, has been imposed upon, or ill-treated by a publican, the offender would be immediately obliged to shut up his house, and if his behaviour had been notorious, he himself would be sent to the gallies, without the least hesitation; and as for the dish which has been made the occasion of your present disorder, (said he) I will take upon me to affirm it was prepared of a genuine rabbit, which was skinned in my presence; and in confirmation of what I assert, though such fricassees are not the favourites of my taste, I will eat a part of this without scruple." So saying, he swallowed several mouthfuls of the questioned coney, and Pallet seemed to eye it again with inclination; nay, he even resumed his knife and fork, and being just on the point of applying them, was seized with another qualm of apprehension, that broke out in an exclamation of, "After all, Mr. Jolter, if it should be a real ram-cat—Lord have mercy upon me! here is one of the claws." With these words he presented

the tip of a toe, of which Pipes had snipt off five or six from a duck that was roasted, and purposely scattered them in the fricassee; and the governor could not behold this testimonial without symptoms of uneasiness and remorse; so that he and the painter sat silenced and abashed, and made faces at each other, while the physician, who hated them both, exulted over their affliction, bidding them be of good chear, and proceed with their meal; for he was ready to demonstrate, that the flesh of a cat was as nourishing and delicious as veal or mutton, provided they could prove, that the said cat was not of the boar-kind, and had fed chiefly on vegetable diet, or even confined its carnivorous appetite to rats and mice, which he affirmed to be dainties of exquisite taste and flavour. He said, it was a vulgar mistake to think that all flesh-devouring creatures were unfit to be eaten; witness the consumption of swine and ducks, animals that delight in carnage, as well as fish, and prey upon each other, and feed on bait and carrion; together with the demand for bear, of which the best hams in the world are made. He then observed that the Negroes on the coast of Guinea, who are a healthy and vigorous people, prefer cats and dogs to all other fare; and mentioned from history several sieges, during which the inhabitants, who were blocked up, lived upon these animals, and had recourse even to human flesh, which to his certain knowledge, was in all respects preferable to pork; for, in the course of his studies, he had, for the experiment's sake, eaten a steak cut from the buttock of a person who had been hanged.

This dissertation, far from composing, increased the disquiet in the stomachs of the governor and painter, who hearing the last illustration, turned their eyes upon

the orator, at the same instant, with looks of horror and disgust; and the one muttering the term *Cannibal*, and the other pronouncing the word *abomination*, they rose from table in a great hurry, and running towards another apartment, justled with such violence in the passage, that both were overturned by the shock, which also contributed to the effect of their nausea, that mutually defiled them as they lay.

CHAP. XLIX.

Nor is the physician sacred from his ridicule. They reach Arras, *where our adventurer engages in play with two* French *officers, who next morning give the landlord an interesting proof of their importance.*

THE doctor remained sullen and dejected during the whole journey: not but that he attempted to recover his importance, by haranguing upon the Roman highways, when Mr. Jolter desired the company to take notice of the fine pavement upon which they travelled from Paris into Flanders; but Pallet, who thought he had now gained the ascendency over the physician, exerted himself in maintaining the superiority he had acquired, by venting various sarcasms upon his self-conceit and affectation of learning, and even uttering puns and conundrums upon the remarks which the republican retailed. When he talked of the Flaminian Way, the painter questioned if it was a better pavement than the Fleminian way on which they travelled: and the doctor having observed, that this road was made for the convenience of drawing French artillery into Flanders, which was often the seat of war; his competitor in wit replied with infinite vivacity, "There are more great

guns than the French king knows of drawn along this causeway, doctor."

Encouraged by the success of these efforts, which tickled the imagination of Jolter, and drew smiles as (he imagined) of approbation from our hero, he sported in many other æquivoques of the same nature; and at dinner told the physician, that he was like the root of the tongue, as being cursedly down in the mouth.

By this time, such was the animosity subsisting between those quondam friends, that they never conversed together, except with a view of exposing each other to the ridicule or contempt of their fellow-travellers. The doctor was at great pains to point out the folly and ignorance of Pallet in private to Peregrine, who was often conjured in the same manner by the painter, to take notice of the physician's want of manners and taste. Pickle pretended to acquiesce in the truth of their mutual severity, which indeed was extremely just, and by malicious insinuations blew up their contention, with a view of bringing it to open hostility. But, both seemed so averse to deeds of mortal purpose, that for a long time his arts were baffled, and he could not spirit them up to any pitch of resentment higher than scurrilous repartee.

Before they reached Arras, the city gates were shut, so that they were obliged to take up their lodging at an indifferent house in the suburbs, where they found a couple of French officers, who had also rode post from Paris so far on their way to Lisle. These gentlemen were about the age of thirty, and their deportment distinguished by such an air of insolence, as disgusted our hero, who nevertheless, accosted them politely in the yard, and proposed that they should sup together. They thanked him for the honour of his invitation, which, how-

ever, they declined, upon pretence of having ordered something for themselves; but promised to wait upon him and his company immediately after their repaſt.

This they accordingly performed; and after having drank a few glasses of Burgundy, one of them asked, if the young gentleman would, for paſtime, take an hand at quadrille. Peregrine easily divined the meaning of this proposal, which was made with no other view than that of fleecing him and his fellow-travellers; for he well knew to what shifts a subaltern in the French service is reduced, in order to maintain the appearance of a gentleman, and had reason to believe that moſt of them were sharpers from their youth: but, as he depended a good deal upon his own penetration and address, he gratified the ſtranger's desire; and a party was inſtantly formed of the painter, the physician, the proposer and himself, the other officer having professed himself utterly ignorant of the game; yet, in the course of the play he took his ſtation at the back of Pickle's chair, which was opposite to his friend, on pretence of amusing himself with seeing his manner of conducting the cards. The youth was not such a novice but that he perceived the design of this palpable piece of behaviour, which, notwithſtanding he overlooked for the present, with a view of flattering their hopes in the beginning, that they might be the more effectually punished, by their disappointment in the end.

The game was scarce begun, when by the reflection of a glass he discerned the officer at his back, making signs to his companion, who, by these pre-concerted geſtures, was perfectly informed of the contents of Peregrine's hand, and of consequence fortunate in the course of play.

Thus they were allowed to enjoy the fruits of their dexterity, until their money amounted to some Louis; when our young gentleman, thinking it high time to do himself juſtice, ſignified in very polite terms to the gentleman who ſtood behind him, that he could never play with ease and deliberation when he was overlooked by any by-ſtander, and begged that he would have the goodness to be seated.

As this was a remonſtrance which the ſtranger could not with any ſhew of breeding reſiſt, he asked pardon, and retired to the chair of the physician, who frankly told him, that it was not the fashion of his country for one to submit his hand to the perusal of a ſpectator; and when, in consequence of this rebuff, he wanted to quarter himself upon the painter, he was refused by a wave of the hand, and shake of the head, with an exclamation of, *Pardonnez moi!* which was repeated with such emphasis, as discomposed his effrontery, and he found himself obliged to sit down in a ſtate of mortification.

The odds being thus removed, fortune proceeded in her usual channel; and though the Frenchman, deprived of his ally, endeavoured to practiſe divers ſtrokes of finesse, the reſt of the company observed him with such vigilance and caution, as baffled all his attempts, and in a very little time he was compelled to part with his winning: but having engaged in the match with an intention of taking all advantages, whether fair or unfair, that his superior skill should give him over the Englishmen, the money was not refunded without a thousand disputes, in the course of which he essayed to intimidate his antagoniſt, with high words, which were retorted by our hero with such intereſt, as convinced him that he had miſtaken his man, and persuaded him to make his

retreat in quiet. Indeed, it was not without cause that they repined at the bad success of their enterprize; because, in all likelihood, they had nothing to depend upon for the present but their own industry, and knew not how to defray their expences on the road, except by some acquisition of this kind.

Next morning they rose at day-break, and resolving to anticipate their fellow-lodgers, bespoke post-horses as soon as they could be admitted into the city; so that when our company appeared, their beasts were ready in the yard; and they only waited to discuss the bill, which they had ordered to be made out. The landlord of the inn presented his carte with fear and trembling to one of those ferocious cavaliers, who no sooner cast his eye upon the sum total, than he discharged a volley of dreadful oaths; and asked, if the king's officers were to be treated in that manner. The poor publican protested, with great humility, that he had the utmost respect for his Majesty, and every thing that belonged to him; and that, far from consulting his own interest, all that he desired was, to be barely indemnified for the expence of their lodging.

This condecension seemed to have no other effect than that of encouraging their arrogance. They swore his extortion should be explained to the commandant of the town, who would, by making him a public example, teach other inn-keepers how to behave towards men of honour; and threatened with such confidence of indignation, that the wretched landlord, dreading the consequence of their wrath, implored pardon in the most abject manner, begging with many supplications, that he might have the pleasure of lodging them at his own charge. This was a favour which he with great

difficulty obtained; they chid him severely for his imposition, exhorted him to have more regard for his own conscience, as well as for the convenience of his guests; and cautioning him in particular touching his behaviour to the gentlemen of the army, mounted their horses, and rode off in great state, leaving him very thankful for having so successfully appeased the choler of two officers, who wanted either inclination or ability to pay their bill: for experience had taught him to be apprehensive of all such travellers, who commonly lay the landlord under contribution, by way of atonement for the extravagance of his demands, even after he has professed his willingness to entertain them on their own terms.

CHAP. L.

Peregrine *moralizes upon their behaviour, which is condemned by the doctor, and defended by the governor. They arrive in safety at* Lisle, *dine at an ordinary, visit the citadel. The physician quarrels with a* North-Briton, *who is put in arrest.*

THESE honourable adventurers being gone, Peregrine, who was present during the transaction, informed himself of the particulars from the mouth of the inn-keeper himself, who took God and the saints to witness, that he should have been a loser by their custom, even if the bill had been paid; because he was on his guard against their objections, and had charged every article at an under price: but such was the authority of officers in France, that he durst not dispute the least circumstance of their will; for had the case come under the cognizance of the magistrate, he must in course have suffered by the maxims of their government, which

never fail to abet the oppression of the army; and besides run the risque of incurring their future resentment, which would be sufficient to ruin him from top to bottom.

Our hero boiled with indignation at this instance of injustice and arbitrary power; and turning to his governor, asked if this too was a proof of the happiness enjoyed by the French people. Jolter replied, that every human constitution must in some things be imperfect; and owned, that in this kingdom gentlemen were more countenanced than the vulgar, because it was to be presumed, that their own sentiments of honour and superior qualifications, would entitle them to this preheminence, which had also a retrospective view to the merit of their ancestors, in consideration of which they were at first ennobled: but he affirmed, that the inn-keeper had misrepresented the magistracy, which in France never failed to punish flagrant outrages and abuse, without respect of persons.

The painter approved of the wisdom of the French government, in bridling the insolence of the mob, by which, he assured them, he had often suffered in his own person; having been often bespattered by hackney-coachmen, justled by draymen and porters, and reviled in the most opprobrious terms by the watermen of London, where he had once lost his bag and a considerable quantity of hair, which had been cut off by some rascal in his passage through Ludgate, during the lord mayor's procession. On the other hand the doctor with great warmth alledged, that those officers ought to suffer death, or banishment at least, for having plundered the people in this manner, which was so impudent and barefaced, as plainly to prove they were certain of escaping with impunity, and that they were old offenders in the

same degree of delinquency. He said, that the greateſt man in Athens would have been condemned to perpetual exile, and ſeen his eſtate confiſcated for public use, had he dared in ſuch a licentious manner to violate the rights of a fellow citizen; and as for the little affronts to which a man may be ſubject, from the petulance of the multitude, he looked upon them as glorious indications of liberty, which ought not to be repreſſed, and would at any time rejoice to find himſelf overthrown in a kennel by the inſolence of a ſon of freedom, even though the fall ſhould coſt him a limb: adding, by way of illuſtration, that the greateſt pleaſure he ever enjoyed, was in ſeeing a duſtman wilfully overturn a gentleman's coach, in which two ladies were bruiſed, even to the danger of their lives. Pallet, ſhocked at the extravagance of this declaration, "If that be the caſe (ſaid he) I wiſh you may ſee every bone in your body broke, by the firſt carman you meet in the ſtreets of London."

This argument being diſcuſſed, and the reckoning diſcharged without any deduction, although the landlord, in ſtating the articles, had an eye to the loſs he had ſuſtained by his own countrymen, they departed from Arras, and arrived in ſafety at Liſle, about two o'clock in the afternoon.

They had ſcarce taken poſſeſſion of their lodgings, in a large hotel on the Grande Place, when the innkeeper gave them to underſtand, that he kept an ordinary below, which was frequented by ſeveral Engliſh gentlemen who reſided in town, and that dinner was then upon the table. Peregrine, who ſeized all opportunities of obſerving new characters, perſuaded his company to dine in public; and they were accordingly conducted to the place, where they found a mixture of

Scotch and Dutch officers, who had come from Holland to learn their exercises at the academy, and some gentlemen in the French service, who were upon garrison-duty in the citadel. Among these last was a person about the age of fifty, of a remarkably genteel air and polite address, dignified with a Maltese cross, and distinguished by the particular veneration of all those who knew him. When he understood that Pickle and his friends were travellers, he accosted the youth in English, which he spoke tolerably well; and as they were strangers, offered to attend them in the afternoon to all the places worth seeing in Lisle. Our hero thanked him for his excess of politeness, which (he said) was peculiar to the French nation; and struck with his engaging appearance, industriously courted his conversation, in the course of which he learnt, that this chevalier was a man of good sense and great experience, that he was perfectly well acquainted with the greatest part of Europe, had lived some years in England, and was no stranger to the constitution and genius of that people.

Having dined, and drank to the healths of the English and French kings, two Fiacres were called, in one of which the knight, with one of his companions, the governor and Peregrine seated themselves, the other being occupied by the physician, Pallet, and two Scottish officers, who proposed to accompany them in their circuit. The first place they visited was the citadel, round the ramparts of which they walked, under the conduct of the knight, who explained with great accuracy the intention of every particular fortification belonging to that seemingly impregnable fortress; and when they had satisfied their curiosity, took coach again, in order to view the arsenal, which stands in another quarter of

the town: but, just as Pickle's carriage had crossed the Promenade, he heard his own name bawled aloud by the painter; and ordering the Fiacre to stop, saw Pallet with one half of his body thrust out at the window of the other coach, crying with a terrified look, "Mr. Pickle, Mr. Pickle, for the love of God! halt, and prevent blood-shed, else here will be carnage and cutting of throats." Peregrine, surprized at this exclamation, immediately alighted, and advancing to the other vehicle, found one of their military companions standing upon the ground, at the further side of the coach, with his sword drawn, and fury in his countenance; and the physician, with a quivering lip and haggard aspect, struggling with the other who had interposed in the quarrel, and detained him in his place.

Our young gentleman, upon inquiry, found that this animosity had sprung from a dispute that happened upon the ramparts, touching the strength of the fortification, which the doctor, according to custom, undervalued, because it was a modern work; saying, that by the help of the military engines used among the antients, and a few thousands of pioneers, he would engage to take it in less than ten days after he should sit down before it. The North-Briton, who was as great a pedant as the physician, having studied fortification, and made himself master of Cæsar's Commentaries and Polybius, with the observations of Folard, affirmed, that all the methods of besieging practised by the ancients, would be utterly ineffectual against such a plan as that of the citadel of Lisle; and began to compare the Vineæ, Aggeres, Arietes, Scorpiones and Catapultæ of the Romans, with the trenches, mines, batteries and mortars used in the present art of war. The republican, finding himself

attacked upon what he thought his ſtrong ſide, ſummoned all his learning to his aid; and describing the famous ſiege of Platæa, happened to misquote a paſſage of Thucydides, in which he was corrected by the other, who having been educated for the church, was alſo a connoiſſeur in the Greek language. The doctor, incenſed at being detected in ſuch a blunder, in preſence of Pallet, who (he knew) would promulgate his ſhame, told the officer, with great arrogance, that his objection was frivolous, and that he muſt not pretend to diſpute on theſe matters with one who had conſidered them with the utmoſt accuracy and care. His antagoniſt, piqued at this ſupercilious inſinuation, replied with great heat, that for ought he knew, the doctor might be a very expert apothecary, but that in the art of war, and knowledge in the Greek tongue, he was no other than an ignorant pretender. This aſſeveration produced an anſwer full of virulence, including a national reflection upon the ſoldier's country; and the contention roſe to mutual abuſe, when it was ſuppreſſed by the admonitions of the other two, who begged they would not expoſe themſelves in a ſtrange place, but behave themſelves like fellow-ſubjects and friends. They accordingly ceaſed reviling each other, and the affair was ſeemingly forgot; but, after they had reſumed their places in the coach, the painter unfortunately aſked the meaning of the word Tortoiſe, which he had heard them mention among the Roman implements of war. This queſtion was anſwered by the phyſician, who deſcribed the nature of this expedient ſo little to the ſatisfaction of the officer, that he contradicted him flatly, in the midſt of his explanation; a circumſtance which provoked the republican to ſuch a degree, that in the temerity of his

passion, he uttered the epithet *impertinent scoundrel*; which was no sooner pronounced than the Caledonian made manual application to his nose, and leaping out of the coach, ſtood waiting for him on the plain; while he (the physician) made feeble efforts to join him, being easily retained by the other soldier; and Pallet, dreading the conſequence in which he himſelf might be involved, bellowed aloud for prevention.

Our hero endeavoured to quiet the commotion, by repreſenting to the Scot, that he had already taken ſatisfaction for the injury he had received; and telling the doctor, that he had deſerved the chaſtiſement which was inflicted upon him: but the officer (encouraged perhaps by the confuſion of his antagoniſt) inſiſted upon his aſking pardon for what he had ſaid; and the doctor, believing himſelf under the protection of his friend Pickle, far from agreeing to ſuch conceſſion, breathed nothing but defiance and revenge: ſo that the chevalier, in order to prevent miſchief, put the ſoldier under arreſt, and ſent him to his lodgings, under the care of the other French gentleman and his own companion; they being alſo accompanied by Mr. Jolter, who having formerly ſeen all the curioſities of Liſle, willingly ſurrendered his place to the phyſician.

CHAP. LI.

Pickle *engages with a knight of* Malta, *in a converſation upon the* Engliſh *ſtage, which is followed by a diſſertation on the theatres of the ancients, by the doctor.*

THE reſt of the company proceeded to the arſenal, which having viewed, together with ſome remarkable churches, they, in their return, went to the comedy,

and saw the Cid of Corneille tolerably well represented. In consequence of this entertainment, the discourse at supper turned upon dramatic performances; and all the objections of Mons. de Scudery to the piece they had seen acted, together with the decision of the French academy, were canvassed and discussed. The knight was a man of letters and taste, and particularly well acquainted with the state of the English stage; so that when the painter boldly pronounced sentence against the French manner of acting, on the strength of having frequented a Covent-Garden club of criticks, and been often admitted, by virtue of an order, into the pit; a comparison immediately ensued, not between the authors, but the actors of both nations, to whom the chevalier and Peregrine were no strangers. Our hero, like a good Englishman, made no scruple of giving the preference to the performers of his own country, who, he alledged, obeyed the genuine impulses of nature, in exhibiting the passions of the human mind; and entered so warmly into the spirit of their several parts, that they often fancied themselves the very heroes they represented. Whereas, the action of the Parisian players, even in their most interesting characters, was generally such an extravagance in voice and gesture, as is no where to be observed but on the stage. To illustrate this assertion, he availed himself of his talent, and mimicked the manner and voice of all the principal performers, male and female, belonging to the French comedy, to the admiration of the chevalier, who having complimented him upon this surprising modulation, begged leave to dissent in some particulars from the opinion he had avowed. "That you have good actors in England, (said he) it would be unjust and absurd in me to deny; your theatre is adorned by one

woman, whose sensibility and sweetness of voice is such as I have never observed on any other ſtage; she has, beſides, an elegance of perſon and expreſſion of features, that wonderfully adapt her for the moſt engaging characters of your beſt plays; and I muſt freely own that I have been as highly delighted and as deeply affected, by a Monimia and Belvidera at London, as ever I was by a Cornelia and Cleopatra at Paris. Your favourite actor is a ſurprising genius. You can, moreover, boaſt of ſeveral comic actors who are perfect maſters of buffoonery and grimace; though, to be free with you, I think, in theſe qualifications you are excelled by the players of Amſterdam. Yet one of your gracioſo's I cannot admire, in all the characters he aſſumes. His utterance is a continual ſing ſong, like the chanting of veſpers, and his action reſembles that of heaving ballaſt into the hold of a ſhip. In his outward deportment, he ſeems to have confounded the ideas of dignity and inſolence of mien, acts the crafty, cool, deſigning Crookback, as a loud, ſhallow, bluſtering Hector; in the character of the mild patriot Brutus, loſes all temper and decorum; nay, ſo ridiculous is the behaviour of him and Caſſius at their interview, that ſetting foot to foot, and grinning at each other, with the aſpect of two coblers enraged, they thruſt their left ſides together, with repeated ſhocks, that the hilts of their ſwords may clash for the entertainment of the audience; as if they were a couple of Merry Andrews, endeavouring to raiſe the laugh of the vulgar, on ſome ſcaffold at Bartholomew Fair. The deſpair of a great man who falls a ſacrifice to the infernal practices of a ſubtle traitor, that enjoyed his confidence, this Engliſh Æſopus repreſents, by beating his own forehead, and bellowing like a bull; and indeed, in almoſt all his moſt

intereſting scenes, performs such ſtrange shakings of the head, and other antic geſticulations, that when I firſt saw him act, I imagined the poor man laboured under that paralitical disorder, which is known by the name of St. Vitus's dance. In short, he seems to be a ſtranger to the more refined sensations of the soul, consequently his expression is of the vulgar kind, and he muſt often sink under the idea of the poet; so that he has recourse to such violence of affected agitation, as imposes upon the undiscerning spectator, but to the eye of taſte, evinces him a meer player of that class whom your admired Shakespear juſtly compares to nature's journeyman tearing a passion to rags. Yet this man, in spite of all these absurdities, is an admirable Falſtaff, exhibits the character of the eighth Henry to the life, is reasonably applauded in the Plain Dealer, excels in the part of Sir John Brute, and would be equal to many humorous situations in low comedy, which his pride will not allow him to undertake. I should not have been so severe upon this actor, had I not seen him extolled by his partizans, with the moſt ridiculous and fulsome manifeſtation of praise, even in those very circumſtances wherein (as I have observed) he chiefly failed."

Pickle, not a little piqued to hear the qualifications of such a celebrated actor in England treated with such freedom and disreſpect, answered with some asperity, that the chevalier was a true critick, more induſtrious in observing the blemishes than in acknowledging the excellence of those who fell under his examination.

It was not to be supposed that one actor could shine equally in all characters; and though his observations were undoubtedly very judicious, he himself could not help wondering that some of them had always escaped

his notice, though he had been an assiduous frequenter of the playhouse. "The player in question, said he, has, in your own opinion, considerable share of merit in the characters of comic life; and as to the manners of the great personages in tragedy, and the operation of the grand passions of the soul, I apprehend, they may be variously represented, according to the various complexion and cultivation of different men. A Spaniard, for example, though impelled by the same passion, will express it very differently from a Frenchman; and what is looked upon as graceful vivacity and address by the one, would be considered as impertinence and foppery by the other: nay, so opposite is your common deportment from that of some other nations, that one of your own countrymen, in the relation of his travels observes, that the Persians even of this age, when they see any man perform unnecessary gestures, say he is either a fool or Frenchman. The standard of demeanour being thus unsettled, a Turk, a Moor, an Indian, or inhabitant of any country, whose customs and dress are widely different from ours, may, in his sentiments, possess all the dignity of the human heart, and be inspired by the noblest passion that animates the soul, and yet excite the laughter rather than the respect of an European spectator.

When I first beheld your famous Parisian stage-heroine, in one of her principal parts, her attitudes seemed so violent, and she tossed her arms around with such extravagance, that she put me in mind of a wind-mill under the agitation of a hard gale; while her voice and features exhibited the lively representation of an English scold. The action of your favourite male-performer was, in my opinion, equally unnatural; he appeared with the affected airs of a dancing-master; at the most pathe-

tic junctures of his fate, he lifted up his hands above his head, like a tumbler going to vault, and spoke as if his throat had been obstructed by an hair-brush; yet, when I compared their manners with those of the people before whom they performed, and made allowance for that exaggeration which obtains on all theatres, I was insensibly reconciled to their method of performance, and could distinguish abundance of merit beneath that oddity of appearance."

The chevalier perceiving Peregrine a little irritated at what he had said, asked pardon for the liberty he had taken, in censuring the English players, assuring him that he had an infinite veneration for the British learning, genius and taste, which were so justly distinguished in the world of letters; and that notwithstanding the severity of his criticism, he thought the theatre of London much better supplied with actors than that of Paris. The young gentleman thanked him for his polite condescension, at which Pallet exulted, saying with a shake of the head, "I believe so too, Monsieur"; and the physician, impatient of the dispute in which he had bore no share, observed with a supercilious air, that the modern stage was altogether beneath the notice of one who had an idea of ancient magnificence and execution; that plays ought to be exhibited at the expence of the state, as those of Sophocles were by the Athenians; and that proper judges should be appointed for receiving or rejecting all such performances as are offered to the public.

He then described the theatre at Rome, which contained eighty thousand spectators, gave them a learned disquisition into the nature of the Persona, or mask, worn by the Roman actors, which, he said, was a machine that covered the whole head, furnished on the in-

side with a brazen concavity, that by reverberating the sound as it issued from the mouth, raised the voice, so as to render it audible to such an extended audience. He explained the difference between the Saltator and Declamator, one of whom acted, while the other rehearsed the part; and from thence took occasion to mention the perfection of their pantomimes, who were so amazingly distinct in the exercise of their art, that a certain prince of Pontus being at the court of Nero, and seeing one of them represent a story, begged him of the emperor, in order to employ him as an interpreter among barbarous nations, whose language he did not understand. Nay, divers cynic philosophers, who had condemned this entertainment unseen, when they chanced to be eye-witnesses of their admirable dexterity, expressed their sorrow for having so long debarred themselves of such rational enjoyment.

He dissented, however, from the opinion of Peregrine, who, as a proof of their excellence, had advanced, that some of the English actors fancied themselves the very thing they represented, and recounted a story from Lucian, of a certain celebrated pantomime, who, in acting the part of Ajax in his frenzy, was transported into a real fit of delirium, during which he tore to pieces the cloaths of that actor who stalked before him, beating the stage with iron shoes, in order to increase the noise, snatched an instrument from one of the musicians, and broke it over the head of him who represented Ulysses; and running to the consular bench, mistook a couple of senators for the sheep which were to be slain. The audience applauded him to the skies; but so conscious was the mimic of his own extravagance, when he recovered the use of his reason, that he actually fell sick with

mortification; and being afterwards desired to re-act the piece, flatly refused to appear in any such character, saying, that the shortest follies were the best, and that it was sufficient for him to have been a madman once in his life.

CHAP. LII.

An adventure happens to Pipes, *in consequence of which he is dismissed from* Peregrine's *service. The whole company set out for* Ghent *in the* Diligence. *Our hero is captivated by a lady in that carriage; interests her spiritual director in his behalf.*

THE doctor being fairly engaged on the subject of the ancients, would have proceeded the Lord knows how far, without hesitation, had not he been interrupted by the arrival of Mr. Jolter, who in great confusion told them, that Pipes having affronted a soldier, was then surrounded in the street, and would certainly be put to death, if some person of authority did not immediately interpose in his behalf.

Peregrine no sooner learned the danger of his trusty squire, than snatching up his sword, he ran down stairs, and was followed by the Chevalier, intreating him to leave the affair to his management. Within ten yards of the door they found Tom with his back to a wall, defending himself manfully with a mopstick against the assault of three or four soldiers, who at sight of the Maltese cross desisted from the attack, and were taken into custody by order of the knight. One of the aggressors, being an Irishman, begged to be heard with great importunity, before he should be sent to the guard; and by the mediation of Pickle, was accordingly brought into

the Hotel, with his companions, all three bearing upon their heads and faces evident marks of their adversary's prowess and dexterity. The spokesman being confronted with Pipes, informed the company, that having by accident met with Mr. Pipes, whom he considered as his countryman, though fortune had disposed of them in different services, he invited him to drink a glass of wine; and accordingly carried him to a Cabaret, where he introduced him to his comrades; but in the course of the conversation, which turned upon the power and greatness of the kings of France and England, Mr. Pipes had been pleased to treat his Most Christian Majesty with great disrespect; and when he (the entertainer) expostulated with him in a friendly manner about his impolite behaviour, observing, that he being in the French service, would be under the necessity of resenting his abuse, if he did not put a stop to it before the other gentlemen of the cloth should comprehend his meaning, he had set them all three at defiance, dishonoured him in particular with the opprobrious epithet of *rebel to his native king and country*, and even drank (in broken French) to the perdition of Lewis and all his adherents! that, compelled by this outrageous conduct, he, as the person who had recommended him to their society, had, in vindication of his own character, demanded satisfaction of the delinquent, who on pretence of fetching a sword, had gone to his lodging, from whence he all of a sudden sallied upon them with the mopstick, which he employed in the annoyance of them all without distinction, so that they were obliged to draw in their own defence.

Pipes being questioned by his master, with regard to the truth of this account, owned that every circumst-

ance was justly represented; saying, he did not value their cheese-toasters a pinch of oakum; and that if the gentleman had not shot in betwixt them, he would have trimmed them to such a tune, that they should not have had a whole yard to square. Peregrine reprimanded him sharply for his unmannerly behaviour, and insisted upon his asking pardon of those he had injured, upon the spot. But no consideration was efficacious enough to produce such concession; to this command he was both deaf and dumb, and the repeated threats of his master had no more effect than if they had been addressed to a marble statue. At length our hero, incensed at his obstinacy, started up, and would have chastised him with manual operation, had not he been prevented by the Chevalier, who found means to moderate his indignation so far, that he contented himself with dismissing the offender from his service; and after having obtained the discharge of the prisoners, gave them a Louis to drink, by way of recompence for the disgrace and damage they had sustained.

The knight perceiving our young gentleman very much ruffled at this accident, and reflecting upon the extraordinary deportment and appearance of his valet, whose hair had by this time adopted a grizzled hue, imagined he was some favourite domestic, who had grown grey in the service of his master's family, and that, of consequence, he was uneasy at the sacrifice he had made. Swayed by this conjecture, he earnestly solicited in his behalf; but all he could obtain, was a promise of readmitting him into favour on the terms already proposed, or at least on condition that he should make his acknowledgment to the Chevalier, for his want of reverence and respect for the French monarch.

Upon this condescension, the culprit was called up ſtairs, and made acquainted with the mitigation of his fate; upon which he ſaid, he would down on his marrow-bones to his own maſter, but would be damn'd before he would ask pardon of e'er a Frenchman in Chriſtendom. Pickle, exasperated at this blunt declaration, ordered him out of his preſence, and charged him never to appear before his face again; while the officer in vain employed all his influence and address to appease his resentment, and about midnight took his leave with marks of mortification at his want of success.

Next day the company agreed to travel thro' Flanders in the Diligence, by the advice of Peregrine, who was not without hope of meeting with some adventure or amuſement in that carriage; and Jolter took care to secure places for them all. It being resolved that the valet de chambre and the doctor's man ſhould attend the vehicle on horſeback; and as for the forlorn Pipes, he was left to reap the fruits of his own ſtubborn diſpoſition, notwithſtanding the united efforts of the whole triumvirate, who endeavoured to procure his pardon.

Every previous measure being thus taken, they set out from Liſle about ſix in the morning, and found themſelves in the company of a female adventurer, a very handſome young lady, a Capuchin, and a Rotterdam Jew. Our young gentleman being the firſt of this ſociety that entered, surveyed the ſtrangers with an attentive eye, and seated himſelf immediately behind the beautiful unknown, who at once attracted his attention. Pallet seeing another lady unengaged, in imitation of his friend, took poſſeſſion of her neighbourhood; the phyſician paired with the prieſt, and Jolter sat down by the Jew.

The machine had not proceeded many furlongs, when Pickle accosting the fair incognita, congratulated himself upon his happiness, in being the fellow-traveller of so charming a lady. She, without the least reserve or affectation, thanked him for his compliment, and replied with a sprightly air, that now they were embarked in one common bottom, they must club their endeavours to make one another as happy as the nature of their situation would permit them to be. Encouraged by this frank intimation, and captivated by her fine black eyes and easy behaviour, he attached himself to her from that moment; and in a little time the conversation became so particular, that the Capuchin thought proper to interfere in the discourse, in such a manner as gave the youth to understand, that he was there on purpose to superintend her conduct. He was doubly rejoiced at this discovery, in consequence of which he hoped to profit in his addresses, not only by the young lady's restraint, that never fails to operate in behalf of the lover, but also by the corruptibility of her guardian, whom he did not doubt of rendering propitious to his cause. Flushed with these expectations, he behaved with uncommon complacency to the father, who was charmed with the affability of his carriage, and on the faith of his generosity abated of his vigilance so much, that our hero carried on his suit without further molestation; while the painter, in signs and loud bursts of laughter, conversed with his Dulcinea, who was perfectly well versed in these simple expressions of satisfaction, and had already found means to make a dangerous invasion upon his heart.

Nor were the governor and physician unemployed, while their friends interested themselves in this agreeable manner. Jolter no sooner perceived the Hollander

was a Jew, than he entered into an investigation of the Hebrew tongue, in which he was a connoisseur; and the doctor at the same time attacked the Mendicant on the ridiculous maxims of his order, together with the impositions of priest-craft in general, which (he observed) prevail so much among those who profess the Roman Catholic religion.

Thus coupled, each committee enjoyed their own conversation apart, without any danger of encroachment; and all were so intent upon their several topics, that they scarce allowed themselves a small interval in viewing the desolation of Menin, as they passed through that ruined frontier. About twelve o'clock they arrived at Courtray, where the horses are always changed, and the company halt an hour for refreshment. Here Peregrine handed his charmer into an apartment, where she was joined by the other lady; and on pretence of seeing some of the churches in town, put himself under the direction of the Capuchin, from whom he learned that the young lady was wife to a French gentleman, to whom she had been married about a year, and that she was now on her journey to visit her mother, who lived in Brussels, and who at that time laboured under a lingering distemper, which, in all probability, would soon put a period to her life. He then launched out in praise of her daughter's virtue and conjugal affection; and lastly told him, that he was her father confessor, and pitched upon to be her conductor through Flanders, by her husband, who, as well as his wife, placed the utmost confidence in his prudence and integrity.

Pickle easily comprehended the meaning of this insinuation, and took the hint accordingly. He tickled the priest's vanity with extraordinary encomiums upon the

disinterested principles of his order, which were detached from all worldly pursuits, and altogether devoted to the eternal salvation of mankind. He applauded their patience, humility and learning, and lavished a world of praise upon their talent in preaching, which (he said) had more than once operated so powerfully upon him, that had he not been restrained by certain considerations which he could not possibly wave, he should have embraced their tenets, and begged admission into their fraternity: but, as the circumstances of his fate would not permit him to take such a salutary measure for the present, he intreated the good father to accept a small token of his love and respect, for the benefit of that convent to which he belonged. So saying, he pulled out a purse of ten guineas, which the Capuchin observing, turned his head another way, and lifting up his arm, displayed a pocket almost as high as his collar-bone, in which he deposited the money.

This proof of affection for the order produced a sudden and surprising effect upon the friar. In the transport of his zeal he wrung this semi-convert's hand, showered a thousand benedictions upon his head, and exhorted him with the tears flowing from his eyes, to perfect the great work which the finger of God had begun in his heart; and as an instance of his concern for the welfare of his precious soul, the holy brother promised to recommend him strenuously to the pious admonitions of the young woman under his care, who was a perfect saint upon earth, and endued with the peculiar gift of mollifying the hearts of obdurate sinners. "O father! (cried the hypocritical projector, who by this time perceived that his money was not thrown away) if I could be favoured but for one half hour with the private instruc-

tion of that inspired devotee, my mind presages, that I should be a ſtray'd sheep brought back into the fold, and that I should find easy entrance at the gates of heaven! There is something supernatural in her aſpect; I gaze upon her with the moſt pious fervor, and my whole soul is agitated with tumults of hope and despair!" Having pronounced this rhapsody with transport half natural and half affected, the prieſt assured him, that these were operations of the spirit, which muſt not be repressed; and comforted him with the hope of enjoying the bleſsed interview which he desired, proteſting, that as far as his influence extended, his wish should be that very evening indulged. The gracious pupil thanked him for his benevolent concern, which he swore should not be squandered upon an ungrateful object; and the reſt of the company interrupting the conversation, they returned in a body to the inn, where they dined all together; and the ladies were persuaded to be our hero's gueſts.

As the subjects on which they had been engaged before dinner were not exhauſted, each brace resumed their former theme, when they were replaced in the Diligence. The painter's miſtress finished her conqueſt, by exerting her skill in the art of ogling, accompanied by frequent bewitching sighs, and some tender French songs that she sung with such pathetic expression, as quite melted the resolution of Pallet, and utterly subdued his affection: and he, to convince her of the importance of her victory, gave a specimen of his own talents, by entertaining her with that celebrated English ditty, the burthen of which begins with, *The pigs they lie with their arses bare.*

CHAP. LIII.

He makes some progress in her affections; is interrupted by a dispute between Jolter *and a* Jew; *appeases the wrath of the Capuchin, who procures for him an interview with his fair enslaver, in which he finds himself deceived.*

PEregrine, mean while, employed all his insinuation and address in practising upon the heart of the Capuchin's fair charge. He had long ago declared his passion, not in the superficial manner of a French gallant, but with all the ardor of an enthusiast. He had languished, vowed, flattered, kiss'd her hand by stealth, and had no reason to complain of his reception. Though by a man of a less sanguine disposition, her particular complaisance would have been deemed equivocal, and perhaps nothing more than the effect of French breeding and constitutional vivacity; he gave his own qualifications credit for the whole, and with these sentiments carried on the attack with such unabating vigour, that she was actually prevailed upon to accept a ring, which he presented as a token of his esteem; and every thing proceeded in a most prosperous train, when they were disturbed by the governor and Israelite, who in the heat of disputation raised their voices, and poured forth such effusions of gutturals, as set our lover's teeth on edge. As they spoke in a language unknown to every one in the carriage but themselves, and looked at each other with mutual animosity and rancour, Peregrine desired to know the cause of their contention. Upon which, Jolter exclaimed in a furious tone, "This learned Levite, forsooth, has the impudence to tell me, that I don't understand Hebrew; and affirms, that the word *Benoni* signifies *child of joy*; whereas I can prove, and indeed have

already said enough to convince any reasonable man, that in the Septuagint it is rightly translated into *son of my sorrow*." Having thus explained himself to his pupil, he turned to the priest, with intention to appeal to his determination; but the Jew pulled him by the sleeve with great eagerness, saying, "For the love of God be quiet, the Capuchin will discover who we are!" Jolter, offended at this conjunction, ecchoed "Who we are!" with great emphasis; and repeating *nos poma natamus*, asked ironically, to which of the Tribes the Jew thought he belonged? The Levite affronted at his comparing him to a ball of horse-dung, replied with a most significant grin, "To the tribe of Issachar." His antagonist, taking the advantage of his unwillingness to be known by the friar, and prompted by revenge for the freedom he had used, answered in the French language, that the judgment of God was still manifest upon their whole race, not only in their being in the state of exiles from their native land, but also in the spite of their hearts and pravity of their dispositions, which demonstrate them to be the genuine offspring of those who crucified the Saviour of the world.

His expectation was, however, defeated; the priest himself was too deeply engaged, to attend to the debates of other people. The physician, in the pride and insolence of his learning, had undertaken to display the absurdity of the Christian faith; having already (as he thought) confuted the Capuchin, touching the points of belief in which the Roman Catholics differ from the rest of the world. But not contented with the imagined victory he had gained, he began to strike at the fundamentals of religion; and the father, with incredible forbearance, suffered him to make very free with the doc-

trine of the Trinity: but, when he levelled the shafts of his ridicule at the immaculate conception of the Blessed Virgin, the good man's patience forsook him, his eyes seemed to kindle with indignation, he trembled in every joint, and uttered with a loud voice, "You are an abominable—I will not call thee heretic, for thou art worse (if possible) than a Jew; you deserve to be inclosed in a furnace seven times heated, and I have a good mind to lodge an information against you with the governor of Ghent, that you may be apprehended and punished as an impious blasphemer."

This menace operated like a charm upon all present. The doctor was confounded, the governor dismayed, the Levite's teeth chattered, the painter was astonished at the general confusion, the cause of which he could not comprehend; and Pickle himself, not a little alarmed, was obliged to use all his interest and assiduity in appeasing this son of the church, who at length, in consideration of the friendship he professed for the young gentleman, consented to forgive what had passed, but absolutely refused to sit in contact with such a profane wretch, whom he looked upon as a fiend of darkness, sent by the enemy of mankind to poison the minds of weak people; so that, after having crossed himself, and muttered certain exorcisms, he insisted upon the doctor's changing places with the Jew, who approached the offended ecclesiastic in an agony of fear.

Matters being thus compromised, the conversation flowed in a more general channel; and without the intervention of any other accident, or bone of contention, the carriage arrived at the city of Ghent about seven in the evening. Supper being bespoke for the whole company, our adventurer and his friends went out to take a

superficial view of the place, leaving his new mistress to the pious exhortations of her confessor, whom (as we have already observed) he had secured in his interest. This zealous mediator spoke so warmly in his commendation, and interested her conscience so much in the affair, that she could not refuse her helping hand to the great work of his conversion, and promised to grant the interview he desired.

This agreeable piece of intelligence, which the Capuchin communicated to Peregrine at his return, elevated his spirits to such a degree, that he shone at supper with uncommon brilliance, in a thousand sallies of wit and pleasantry, to the admiration and delight of all present, especially of his fair Fleming, who seemed quite captivated by his person and behaviour.

The evening being thus spent to the satisfaction of all parties, the company broke up, and retired to their several apartments, when our lover, to his unspeakable mortification, learned that the two ladies were obliged to lie in the same room, all the other chambers of the inn being preoccupied. When he imparted this difficulty to the priest, that charitable father, who was very fruitful in expedients, assured him, that his spiritual concerns should not be obstructed by such a slender impediment; and accordingly availed himself of his prerogative, by going in to his daughter's chamber when she was almost undressed, and leading her into his own, on pretence of administring salutary food for her soul. Having brought the two votaries together, he prayed for success to the operations of grace, and left them to their mutual meditations, after having conjured them in the most solemn manner to let no impure sentiments, or temptations of the flesh, interfere with the hallowed design of their meeting.

The reverend intercessor being gone, and the door fastened on the inside, the pseudo-convert, transported with his passion, threw himself at his Amanda's feet; and begging she would spare him the tedious form of addresses, which the nature of their interview would not permit him to observe, began with all the impetuosity of love to make the most by the occasion. But whether she was displeased by the intrepidity and assurance of his behaviour, thinking herself intitled to more courtship and respect, or was really better fortified with chastity than he or his procurer had supposed her to be; certain it is, she expressed resentment and surprize at his boldness and presumption, and upbraided him with having imposed upon the charity of the friar. The young gentleman was really as much astonished at this rebuff, as she pretended to be at his declaration, and earnestly entreated her to consider how precious the moments were, and for once sacrifice superfluous ceremony, to the happiness of one who adored her with such a flame, as could not fail to consume his vitals, if she would not deign to bless him with her favour. Notwithstanding all his tears, vows and supplications, his personal accomplishments and the tempting opportunity, all that he could obtain, was an acknowledgment of his having made an impression upon her heart, which she hoped the dictates of her duty would enable her to erase. This confession he considered as a delicate consent; and obeying the impulse of his love, snatched her up in his arms, with an intention of seizing that which she declined to give; when this French Lucretia, unable to defend her virtue any other way, screamed aloud; and the Capuchin, setting his shoulder to the door, forced it open, and entered in an affected extasy of amazement.

He lifted up his hands and eyes, and pretended to be thunderſtruck at the discovery he had made; then, in broken exclamations, profeſſed his horror at the wicked intention of our hero, who had covered ſuch a damnable ſcheme with the maſk of religion.

In ſhort, he performed his cue with ſuch dexterity, that the lady believing him in earneſt, begg'd he would forgive the ſtranger, on account of his youth and education, which had been tainted by the errors of heresy; and he was on theſe conſiderations content to accept the ſubmiſſion of our hero, who, far from renouncing his expectations, notwithſtanding this mortifying repulſe, confided ſo much in his own talents, and the confeſſion which his miſtreſs had made, that he reſolved to make another effort, to which nothing could have prompted him but the utmoſt turbulence of unruly deſire.

CHAP. LIV.

He makes another effort towards the accompliſhment of his wiſh, which is poſtponed by a ſtrange accident.

HE directed his valet de chambre, who was a thorough-paced pimp, to kindle ſome ſtraw in the yard, and then paſs by the door of her apartment, crying with a loud voice that the houſe was on fire. This alarm brought both ladies out of their chambers in a moment, and Peregrine taking the advantage of their running to the ſtreet door, entered the room and concealed himſelf under a large table that ſtood in an unobſerved corner. The nymphs, as ſoon as they underſtood the cauſe of his Mercury's ſuppoſed affright, returned to their apartment, and having ſaid their prayers, undreſſed themſelves and went to bed. This ſcene, which fell under the

observation of Pickle, did not at all contribute to the cooling of his concupiscence, but on the contrary, inflamed him to such a degree, that he could scarce restrain his impatience, until by her breathing deep, he concluded the fellow-lodger of his Amanda was asleep. This welcome note no sooner saluted his ears, than he crept to his charmer's bed-side, and placing himself on his knees, gently laid hold on her white hand, and pressed it to his lips. She had juſt begun to close her eyes, and enjoy the agreeable oppression of slumber, when she was roused by this rape, at which she ſtarted, pronouncing in a tone of surprize and dismay, "My God! who's that?" The lover, with the moſt insinuating humility, besought her to hear him; vowing that his intention in approaching her thus, was not to violate the laws of decency, or that indelible eſteem which she had engraven on his heart; but to manifeſt his sorrow and contrition for the umbrage he had given, to pour forth the overflowings of his soul, and tell her that he neither could nor would survive her displeasure. These and many more pathetic proteſtations, accompanied with sighs and tears, and other expressions of grief, which our hero had at command, could not fail to melt the tender heart of the amiable Fleming, already prepossessed in favour of his qualifications. She sympathized so much with his affliction, as to weep in her turn, when she represented the impossibility of her rewarding his passion; and he seizing the favourable moment, reinforced his sollicitations with such irresistible transports, that her resolution gave way, she began to breathe quick, expressed her fear of being overheard by the other lady, and with an ejaculation of "O heavens! I'm undone:" suffered him, after a faint ſtruggle, to make a lodgment upon

the covered way of her bed. Her honour however was secured for the present, by a ſtrange ſort of knocking upon the wainſcot, at the other end of the room, hard by the bed in which the female adventurer lay.

Surprised at this circumſtance, the lady begged him for heaven's ſake to retreat, or her reputation would be ruined for ever: but when he repreſented to her, that her character would run a much greater riſk, if he ſhould be detected in withdrawing, ſhe conſented with great trepidation to his ſtay, and they liſtened in ſilence to the ſequel of the noiſe that alarmed them. This was no other than an expedient of the painter, to awaken his Dulcinea, with whom he had made an aſſignation, or at leaſt interchanged ſuch ſignals as he thought amounted to a firm appointment. His nymph being diſturbed in her firſt ſleep, immediately underſtood the ſound, and true to the agreement, roſe, and unbolting the door as ſoftly as poſſible, gave him admittance, leaving it open for his more commodious retreat.

While this happy gallant was employed in diſengaging himſelf from the diſhabille in which he had entered, the Capuchin ſuſpecting that Peregrine would make another attempt upon his charge, had crept ſilently to the apartment, in order to reconnoitre, leſt the adventure ſhould be atchieved without his knowledge; a circumſtance that would deprive him of the profits he might expect from his privity and concurrence. Finding the door unlatched, his ſuſpicion was confirmed, and he made no ſcruple of creeping into the chamber on all four; ſo that the painter having ſtript himſelf to the ſhirt, in groping about for his Dulcinea's bed, chanced to lay his hand upon the ſhaven crown of the father's head, which by a circular motion, the prieſt began to

turn round in his grasp, like a ball in a socket, to the surprize and conſternation of poor Pallet, who having neither penetration to comprehend the caſe, nor reſolution to withdraw his fingers from this ſtrange object of his touch, ſtood ſweating in the dark, and venting ejaculations with great devotion. The friar tired with this exercise, and the painful poſture in which he ſtooped, raiſed himſelf gradually upon his feet, heaving up at the ſame time the hand of the painter, whoſe terror and amazement increaſed to ſuch a degree at this unaccountable elevation, that his faculties began to fail; and his palm in the confuſion of his fright ſliding over the prieſt's forehead, one of his fingers happened to ſlip into his mouth, and was immediately ſecured between the Capuchin's teeth, with as firm a fixture as if it had been ſcrewed in a blackſmith's vice. The painter was ſo much diſordered by this ſudden ſnap, which tortured him to the bone, that forgetting all other conſiderations, he roared aloud, "Murder! fire! a trap, a trap! help, chriſtians, for the love of God help." Our hero confounded by theſe exclamations, which he knew would ſoon fill the room with ſpectators, and incenſed at his own mortifying diſappointment, was obliged to quit the untaſted banquet, and approaching the cauſe of his misfortune, juſt as his tormentor had thought proper to releaſe his finger, diſcharged ſuch a hearty ſlap between his ſhoulders, as brought him to the ground with hideous bellowing, then retiring unperceived, to his own chamber, was one of the firſt who returned with a light, on pretence of having been alarmed with his cries. The Capuchin had taken the ſame precaution, and followed Peregrine into the room, pronouncing *Benedicite*, and croſſing himſelf with many marks of aſtoniſhment. The phyſician

and Jolter appearing at the same time, the unfortunate painter was found lying naked on the floor, in all the agony of horror and dismay, blowing upon his left hand, that hung dangling from the elbow. The circumstance of his being found in that apartment, and the attitude of his affliction, which was extremely ridiculous, provoked the doctor to a smile, and produced a small relaxation in the severity of the governor's countenance; while Pickle testifying surprize and concern, lifted him from the ground, and enquired into the cause of his present situation. Having, after some recollection, and fruitless endeavours to speak, recovered the use of his tongue, he told them that the house was certainly haunted by evil spirits, by which he had been conveyed (he knew not how) into that apartment, and afflicted with all the tortures of hell: that one of them had made itself sensible to his feeling, in the shape of a round ball of smooth flesh, which turned round under his hand, like an astronomer's globe, and then rising up to a surprising, height, was converted into a machine that laid hold on his finger, by a snap, and having pinned him to the spot, he continued for some moments in unspeakable agony. At last he said the engine seemed to melt away from his finger, and he received a sudden thwack upon his shoulders, as if discharged by the arm of a giant, which overthrew him in an instant upon the floor. The priest hearing this strange account, pulled out of one of his pouches a piece of consecrated candle, which he lighted immediately, and muttered certain mysterious conjurations. Jolter, imagining that Pallet was drunk, shook his head, saying, he believed the spirit was no where but in his own brain. The physician, for once, condescended to be a wag, and looking towards one of the

beds, observed, that in his opinion, the painter had been misled by the flesh, and not by the spirit. The fair Fleming lay in silent aſtonishment and affright; and her fellow-lodger, in order to acquit herself of all suspicion, exclaimed with incredible volubility againſt the author of this uproar, who (she did not doubt) had concealed himself in the apartment with a view of perpetrating some wicked attempt upon her precious virtue, and was punished and prevented by the immediate interposition of heaven. At her desire, therefore, and at the earneſt solicitation of the other lady, he was conducted to his own bed, and the chamber being evacuated, they locked their door, fully resolved to admit no more visitants for that night: while Peregrine, mad with seeing the delicious morsel, snatched (as it were) from his very lip, ſtalked through the passage, like a ghoſt, in hope of finding some opportunity of re-entering, till the day beginning to break, he was obliged to retire, cursing the ideotical conduct of the painter, which had so unluckily interfered with his delight.

CHAP. LV.

They depart from Ghent. *Our hero engages in a political dispute with his miſtress, whom he offends, and pacifies with submission. He practises an expedient to detain the carriage at* Aloſt, *and confirms the prieſt in his intereſt.*

NEXT day, about one o'clock, after having seen every thing remarkable in town, and been present at the execution of two youths, who were hanged for ravishing a whore, they took their departure from Ghent in the same carriage which had brought them thither; and the conversation turning upon the punishment they

had seen inflicted, the Flemish beauty expressed great sympathy and compassion for the unhappy sufferers, who (as she had been informed) had fallen victims to the malice of the accuser. Her sentiments were espoused by all the company, except the French lady of pleasure, who, thinking the credit of the sisterhood concerned in the affair, bitterly inveighed against the profligacy of the age, and particularly the base and villainous attempts of man upon the chastity of the weaker sex; saying with a look of indignation directed to the painter, that for her own part, she should never be able to manifest the acknowledgment she owed to providence, for having protected her last night, from the wicked aims of unbridled lust. This observation introduced a series of jokes, at the expence of Pallet, who hung his ears, and sat with a silent air of dejection, fearing that through the malevolence of the physician, his adventure might reach the ears of his wife. Indeed, though we have made shift to explain the whole transaction to the reader, it was an inextricable mystery to every individual in the Diligence; because the part which was acted by the Capuchin, was known to himself alone; and even he was utterly ignorant of Pickle's being concerned in the affair; so that the greatest share of the painter's sufferings were supposed to be the exaggerations of his own extravagant imagination.

In the midst of their discourse on this extraordinary subject, the driver told them, that they were now on the very spot where a detachment of the allied army had been intercepted and cut off by the French; and stopping the vehicle, entertained them with a local description of the battle of Melle. Upon this occasion, the Flemish lady, who since her marriage had become a

keen partizan for the French, gave a minute detail of all the circumstances, as they had been represented to her by her husband's brother, who was in the action. This account, which sunk the number of the French to sixteen, and raised that of the allies to twenty thousand men, was so disagreeable to truth, as well as to the laudable partiality of Peregrine, that he ventured to contradict her assertions, and a fierce dispute commenced, that not only regarded the present question, but also comprehended all the battles in which the duke of Marlborough had commanded against Lewis the fourteenth. In the course of these debates, she divested that great general of all the glory he had acquired, by affirming, that every victory he gained was purposely lost by the French generals, in order to bring the schemes of madam de Maintenon into discredit; and as a particular instance, alledged that while the citadel of Lisle was besieged, Lewis said, in presence of the Dauphin, that if the allies should be obliged to raise the siege, he would immediately declare his marriage with that lady; upon which, the son sent private orders to marshal Boufflers to surrender the place. This strange allegation was supported by the asseverations of the priest and the courtezan, and admitted as truth by the governor, who pretended to have heard it from good authority: while the doctor sat neutral, as one who thought it scandalous to know the history of such modern events. The Israelite, being a true Dutchman, listed himself under the banners of our hero, who, in attempting to demonstrate the absurdity and improbability of what they had advanced, raised such a hue and cry against himself, and being insensibly heated in the altercation, irritated his Amanda to such a degree, that her charming eyes kindled with

fury, and he saw great reason to think, that if he did not fall upon some method to deprecate her wrath, she would in a twinkling sacrifice all her eſteem for him, to her own zeal for the glory of the French nation. Moved by this apprehension, his ardour cooled by degrees, and he insensibly detached himself from the argument, leaving the whole care of supporting it on the Jew, who finding himself deserted, was fain to yield at discretion; so that the French remained maſters of the field, and their young heroine resumed her good humour.

Our hero having prudently submitted to the superior intelligence of his fair enslaver, began to be harrassed with the fears of losing her for ever, and set his invention at work, to contrive some means of indemnifying himself for his assiduities, presents, and the disappointment he had already undergone. On pretence of enjoying a freer air, he mounted the box, and employed his elocution and generosity with such success, that the driver undertook to disable the Diligence from proceeding beyond the town of Aloſt for that day; and in consequence of his promise, gently overturned it, when they were but a mile short of that baiting place. He had taken his measures so discreetly, that this accident was attended with no other inconvenience than a fit of fear that took possession of the ladies, and the necessity to which they were reduced by the declaration of the coachman, who, upon examining the carriage, assured the company that the axle-tree had given way, and advised them to walk forward to the inn, while he would jog after them at a slow pace, and do his endeavour that the damage should be immediately repaired. Peregrine pretended to be very much concerned at what had happened, and even cursed the driver for his inadvertancy,

expressing infinite impatience to be at Brussels, and wishing that this misfortune might not detain them another night upon the road; but when his underſtrapper, according to his inſtructions, came afterwards to the inn, and gave them to underſtand that the workman he had employed could not poſſibly refit the machine in less than ſix hours, the crafty youth affected to loſe all temper, ſtormed at his emiſſary, whom he reviled in the moſt opprobrious terms, and threatened to cane for his miſconduct. The fellow proteſted, with great humility, that their being overturned was owing to the failure of the axle-tree, and not to his want of care or dexterity in driving; though rather than be thought the cauſe of incommoding him, he would inquire for a poſt-chaiſe, in which he might depart for Brussels immediately. This expedient Pickle rejected, unleſs the whole company could be accommodated in the ſame manner; and he had been previouſly informed by the driver, that the town could not furniſh more than one vehicle of that ſort. His governor, who was quite ignorant of his ſcheme, repreſented that one night would ſoon be paſſed, and exhorted him to bear this ſmall diſappointment with a good grace, eſpecially as the houſe ſeemed to be well provided for their entertainment, and the company ſo much diſpoſed to be ſociable. The Capuchin, who had found his account in cultivating the acquaintance of the young ſtranger, was not ill pleaſed at this event, which might, by protracting the term of their intercourſe, yield him ſome opportunity of profiting ſtill further by his liberality: he therefore joined Mr. Jolter in his admonitions, congratulating himſelf upon the proſpect of enjoying his converſation a little longer than he had expected. Our young gentleman received a com-

pliment to the same purpose from the Hebrew, who had that day exercised his gallantry upon the French coquette, and was not without hope of reaping the fruits of his attention, his rival, the painter, being quite disgraced and dejected by the adventure of last night. As for the doctor, he was too much ingrossed in the contemplation of his own importance, to interest himself in the affair, or its consequences, further than by observing that the European powers ought to establish public games, like those that were celebrated of old in Greece; in which case, every state would be supplied with such dextrous charioteers, as would drive a machine at full speed, within a hair's breadth of a precipice, without any danger of its being overthrown. Peregrine could not help yielding to their remonstrances, and united complaisance, for which he thanked them in very polite terms, and his passion seeming to subside, proposed that they should amuse themselves in walking round the ramparts. He hoped to enjoy some private conversation with his admired Fleming, who had this whole day behaved with remarkable reserve. The proposal being embraced, he (as usual) handed her into the street, and took all opportunities of promoting his suit; but they were attended so closely by her father confessor, that he foresaw it would be impracticable to accomplish his aim, without the connivance of that ecclesiastick. This he was obliged to purchase with another purse, which he offered, and was accepted as a charitable atonement for his criminal behaviour during the interview which the friar had procured for the good of his soul. The benefaction was no sooner made, than the pious mendicant edged off by little and little, till he joined the rest of the company, leaving his generous patron at full liberty to

prosecute his purpose. It is not to be doubted that our adventurer made a good use of this occasion: he practised a thousand flowers of rhetoric, and actually exhausted his whole address, in persuading her to have compassion upon his misery, and indulge him with another private audience, without which he should run distracted, and be guilty of extravagancies, which, in the humanity of her disposition, she would weep to see. But, instead of complying with his request, she chid him severely for his presumption, in persecuting her with his vicious addresses. She assured him, that although she had secured a chamber for herself in this place, because she had no ambition to be better acquainted with the other lady, he would be in the wrong to disturb her with another nocturnal visit; for she was determined to deny him admittance. The lover was comforted by this hint, which he understood in the true acceptation, and his passion being inflamed by the obstacles he had met with, his heart beat high with the prospect of possession. These raptures of expectation produced an inquietude, which disabled him from bearing that share of the conversation for which he used to be distinguished. His behaviour at supper was a vicissitude of startings and reveries. The Capuchin imputing this disorder to a second repulse from his charge, began to be invaded with the apprehension of being obliged to refund, and in a whisper forebad our hero to despair.

CHAP. LVI.

The French coquet entraps the heart of the Jew, *against whom* Pallet *enters into a conspiracy; by which* Peregrine *is again disappointed, and the* Hebrew's *incontinence exposed.*

MEAN while the French syren, baulked in her design upon her English cully, who was so easily disheartened, and hung his ears in manifest despondence, rather than run the risque of making a voyage that should be altogether unprofitable, resolved to practise her charms upon the Dutch merchant. She had already made such innovation upon his heart, that he cultivated her with peculiar complacency, gazed upon her with a most libidinous stare, and unbended his aspect into a grin that was truly Israelitish. The painter saw, and was offended at this correspondence, which he considered as an insult upon his misfortune, as well as an evident preference of his rival; and conscious of his own timidity, swallowed an extraordinary glass, that his invention might be stimulated, and his resolution raised to the contrivance and execution of some scheme of revenge. The wine, however, failed in the expected effect, and without inspiring him with the plan, served only to quicken his desire of vengeance; so that he communicated his purpose to his friend Peregrine, and begged his assistance; but our young gentleman was too intent upon his own affair, to mind the concerns of any other person, and he declining to be engaged in the project, Pallet had recourse to the genius of Pickle's valet de chambre, who readily embarked in the undertaking, and invented a plan, which was executed accordingly.

The evening being pretty far advanced, and the com-

pany separated into their respective apartments, Pickle repaired, in all the impatience of youth and desire, to the chamber of his charmer, and finding the door unbolted, entered in a transport of joy. By the light of the moon, which shone through the window, he was conducted to her bed, which he approached in the utmost agitation, and perceiving her to all appearance asleep, essayed to wake her with a gentle kiss; but this method proved ineffectual, because she was determined to save herself the confusion of being an accomplice in his guilt. He repeated the application, murmured a most passionate salutation in her ear, and took such other gentle methods of signifying his presence, as persuaded him that she was resolved to sleep, in spite of all his endeavours: flushed with this agreeable supposition, he locked the door, in order to prevent interruption, and stealing himself under the cloaths, set fortune at defiance, while he held the fair creature circled in his arms.

Nevertheless, near as he seemed to be to the happy accomplishment of his desire, his hope was again frustrated by a fearful noise, which in a moment awaked his Amanda in a fright, and for the present engaged all his attention. His valet de chambre, whom Pallet had consulted as a confederate in his revenge against the lady of pleasure and her Jewish gallant, had hired of certain Bohemians, who chanced to lodge at the inn, a jack-ass adorned with bells, which, when every body was retired to rest, and the Hebrew supposed to be bedded with his mistress, they led up-stairs into a long thoroughfare, from which the chambers were detached on each side. The painter, perceiving the lady's door a-jar, according to his expectation, mounted this animal, with intention to ride into the room, and disturb the lovers in the midst of their mutual endearments; but the ass, true to his

kind, finding himself bestrid by an unknown rider, instead of advancing in obedience to his conductor, retreated backward to the other end of the passage, in spite of all the efforts of the painter, who spurred and kicked, and pummelled to no purpose. It was the noise of this contention between Pallet and the ass, which invaded the ears of Peregrine and his mistress, neither of whom could form the least rational conjecture about the cause of such strange disturbance, which increased as the animals approached their apartment. At length, the Bourrique's retrograde motion was obstructed by their door, which it forced open, in a twinkling, with one kick, and entered with such complication of sound, as terrified the lady almost into a fit, and threw her lover into the utmost perplexity and confusion. The painter, finding himself thus violently intruded into the bed-chamber of he knew not whom, and dreading the resentment of the possessor, who might discharge a pistol at him as a robber who had broke into his apartment, was overwhelmed with consternation, and redoubled his exertion, to accomplish a speedy retreat, sweating all the time with fear, and putting up petitions to heaven for his safety; but his obstinate companion, regardless of his situation, instead of submitting to his conduct, began to turn round like a millstone, the united sound of his feet and bells producing a most surprising concert. The unfortunate rider, whirled about in this manner, would have quitted his seat, and left the beast to his own amusement, but the rotation was so rapid, that the terror of a severe fall hindered him from attempting to dismount, and in the desperation of his heart, he seized one of its ears, which he pinched so unmercifully, that the creature set up his throat, and brayed aloud. This hideous exclamation was no sooner heard by the fair Fleming,

already chilled with panic, and prepared with superſtition, than, believing herself visited by the devil, who was permitted to punish her for her infidelity to the marriage-bed, she uttered a scream, and began to repeat her paternoſter with a loud voice. Her lover, finding himself under the necessity of retiring, ſtarted up, and ſtung with the moſt violent pangs of rage and disappointment, ran directly to the spot from whence this diabolical noise seemed to proceed. There encountering the ass, he discharged such a volley of blows at him and his rider, that the creature carried him off at a round trot, and they roared in unison all the way. Having thus cleared the room of such disagreeable company, he went back to his miſtress, and assuring her, that this was only some foolish prank of Pallet, took his leave, with a promise of returning after the quiet of the inn should be reeſtablished.

In the mean time the noise of the Bourrique, the cries of the painter, and the lady's scream, had alarmed the whole house; and the ass, in the precipitation of his retreat, seeing people with lights before him, took shelter in the apartment for which he was at firſt designed, juſt as the Levite, aroused at the uproar, had quitted his Dulcinea, and was attempting to recover his own chamber, unperceived. Seeing himself opposed by such an animal, mounted by a tall, meagre, lanthorn-jaw'd figure half naked, with a white night-cap upon his head, which added to the natural paleness of his complexion, the Jew was sorely troubled in mind, and believing it to be an apparition of Balaam and his ass, fled backward with a nimble pace, and crept under the bed, where he lay concealed. Mr. Jolter, and the prieſt, who were the foremoſt of those who had been aroused by the noise, were not unmoved when they saw such a spectacle rushing in-

to this chamber, from whence the lady of pleasure began to shriek. The governor made a full halt, and the Capuchin discovered no inclination to proceed. They were (however) by the pressure of the crowd that followed them, thruſt forward to the door, through which the vision entered; and there Jolter with great ceremony, complimented his reverence with the pas, beseeching him to walk in. The mendicant was too courteous and humble to accept this preheminence, and a very earneſt dispute ensued; during which the ass, in the course of his circuit, shewed himself and rider, and in a trice decided the conteſt; for, ſtruck with this second glimpse, both, at one inſtant, sprung backward with such force, as overturned their next men, who communicated the impulse to those that ſtood behind them, and these again to others; so that the whole passage was ſtrewed with a long file of people, that lay in a line, like the sequel and dependance of a pack of cards. In the midſt of this havock, our hero returned from his own room with an air of aſtonishment, asking the cause of this uproar. Receiving such hints of intelligence as Jolter's conſternation would permit him to give, he snatched the candle out of his hand, and advanced into the haunted chamber without hesitation, being followed by all present, who broke forth into a long and loud peal of laughter, when they perceived the ludicrous source of their disquiet. The painter himself made an effort to join their mirth, but he had been so harrowed by fear, and smarted so much with the pain of the discipline he had received from Pickle, that he could not, with all his endeavour, vanquish the ruefulness of his countenance. His attempt served only to increase the awkwardness of his situation, which was not at all mended by the behaviour of the coquette, who, furious with her disap-

pointment, slipped on a petticoat and bed-gown, and springing upon him, like another Hecuba, with her nails, deprived all one side of his nose of the skin, and would not have left him an eye to see thro', if some of the company had not rescued him from her unmerciful talons. Provoked at this outrage, as well as by her behaviour to him in the Diligence, he publickly explained his intention in entering her chamber in this equipage; and missing the Hebrew among the spectators, assured them that he must have absconded somewhere in the apartment. In pursuance of this intimation, the room was immediately searched, and the mortified Levite pulled by the heels from his lurking-place; so that Pallet had the good fortune, at last, to transfer the laugh from himself to his rival, and the French inamorata, who accordingly underwent the ridicule of the whole audience.

CHAP. LVII.

Pallet, *endeavouring to unravel the mystery of the treatment he had received, falls out of the frying-pan into the fire.*

NEvertheless, Pallet was still confounded, and chagrined by one consideration, which was no other than that of his having been so roughly handled in the chamber, belonging (as he found upon inquiry) to the handsome young lady, who was under the Capuchin's direction. He recollected, that the door was fast locked, when his beast burst it open; and he had no reason to believe that any person followed him in his irruption; on the other hand, he could not imagine, that such a gentle creature would either attempt to commit, or be able to execute such a desperate assault as that which his body had sustained; and her demeanor was so modest and

circumspect, that he durst not harbour the least suspicion of her virtue.

These reflections bewildered him in the labyrinth of thought: he rummaged his whole imagination, endeavouring to account for what had happened. At length he concluded, that either Peregrine, or the devil, or both, must have been at the bottom of the whole affair, and determined, for the satisfaction of his curiosity, to watch our hero's motions, during the remaining part of the night, so narrowly, that his conduct, mysterious as it was, should not be able to elude his penetration.

With these sentiments he retired to his own room, after the ass had been restored to the right owners, and the priest had visited and confirmed his fair ward, who had been almost distracted with fear. Silence no sooner prevailed again, than he crawled darkling towards her door, and huddled himself up in an obscure corner, from whence he might observe the ingress or egress of any human creature. He had not long remained in this posture, when, fatigued with this adventure, and that of the preceding night, his faculties were gradually overpowered with slumber; and falling fast asleep, he began to snore like a whole congregation of presbyterians. The Flemish beauty, hearing this discordant noise in the passage, began to be afraid of some new alarm, and very prudently bolted her door: so that when her lover wanted to repeat his visit, he was not only surprised and incensed at this disagreeable serenade, the author of which he did not know; but when compelled by his passion, which was by this time wound to the highest pitch, he ventured to approach the entrance, he had the extreme mortification to find himself shut out. He durst not knock, or signify his presence in any other manner, on

account of the lady's reputation, which would have greatly suffered, had the snorer been waked by his endeavours. Had he known that the person who thus thwarted his views, was the painter, he would have taken some effectual ſtep to remove him; but he could not conceive what ſhould induce Pallet to take up his reſidence in that corner; nor could he use the aſſiſtance of a light, to diſtinguiſh him, because there was not a candle burning in the houſe.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the rage and vexation of our hero, while he continued thus tantalized upon the brink of bliſs, after his deſire had been exaſperated by the circumſtances of his two former diſappointments. He ejaculated a thouſand execrations againſt his own fortune, curſed all his fellow-travellers, without exception, vowed revenge againſt the painter, who had twice confounded his moſt intereſting ſcheme, and was tempted to execute immediate vengeance upon the unknown cauſe of his preſent miſcarriage. In this agony of diſtraction did he ſweat two whole hours in the paſſage, though not without ſome faint hope of being delivered from his tormentor, who (he imagined) upon waking, would undoubtedly ſhift his quarters, and leave the field free to his deſigns; but when he heard the cock repeat his ſalutation to the morn, which began to open on the rear of night, he could no longer reſtrain his indignation. Going to his own chamber, he filled a baſin with cold water, and, ſtanding at ſome diſtance, diſcharged it full in the face of the gaping ſnorer, who, over and above the ſurprize occaſioned by the application, was almoſt ſuffocated by the liquor that entered his mouth, and ran down into his wind-pipe. While he gaſped like a perſon half drowned, without knowing the nature of his diſaſter, or remembering the ſituation in which he fell

asleep, Peregrine retired to his own door, and, to his no small astonishment, from a long howl that invaded his ears, learned that the patient was no other than Pallet, who had now, for the third time, baulked his good fortune.

Enraged at the complicated trespasses of this unfortunate offender, he rushed from his apartment with a horse-whip, and encountering the painter in his flight, overturned him in the passage. There he exercised the instrument of his wrath with great severity, on pretence of mistaking him for some presumptuous cur, which had disturbed the repose of the inn; nay, when he called aloud for mercy in a supplicating tone, and his chastiser could no longer pretend to treat him as a quadruped; such was the virulence of the young gentleman's indignation, that he could not help declaring his satisfaction, by telling Pallet he had richly deserved the punishment he had undergone, for his madness, folly and impertinence, in contriving and executing such idle schemes, as had no other tendency than that of plaguing his neighbours.

Pallet protested, with great vehemence, that he was innocent, as the child unborn, of an intention to give umbrage to any person whatever, except the Israelite and his doxy, who he knew had incurred his displeasure. "But, as God is my Saviour! (said he) I believe I am persecuted with witchcraft, and begin to think that damn'd priest is an agent for the devil; for he has been but two nights in our company, during which I have not closed an eye; but, on the contrary, have been tormented by all the fiends of hell." Pickle peevishly replied, that his torments had been occasioned by his own foolish imagination; and asked how he came to howl in that corner. The painter, who did not think proper to own the truth, said,

that he had been transported thither, by some preternatural conveyance, and soused in water by an invisible hand. The youth, in hope of profiting by his absence, advised him to retire immediately to his bed, and by sleep ſtrive to comfort his brain, which seemed to be not a little disordered by the want of that refreshment. Pallet himself began to be very much of the same way of thinking; and, in compliance with such wholesome counsel, betook himself to reſt, muttering prayers all the way for the recovery of his own underſtanding.

Pickle attended him to his chamber, and locking him up, put the key in his own pocket, that he might not have it in his power to interrupt him again: but in his return he was met by Mr. Jolter and the doctor, who had been a second time alarmed by the painter's cries, and come to enquire about this new adventure. Half frantic with such a series of disappointments, he cursed them in his heart for their unseasonable appearance. When they queſtioned him about Pallet, he told them he had found him ſtark ſtaring mad, howling in a corner, and wet to the skin, and conducted him to his room, where he was now abed. The physician hearing this circumſtance, made a merit of his vanity; and, under pretence of concern for the patient's welfare, desired he might have an opportunity of examining the symptoms of his disorder, without loss of time; alledging, that many diseases might have been ſtifled in the birth, which afterwards baffled all the endeavours of the medical art. The young gentleman accordingly delivered the key, and once more withdrew into his own chamber, with a view of seizing the firſt occasion that should present itself of renewing his application to his Amanda's door; while the doctor, in his way to Pallet's apartment, hinted to the governor his

suspicion, that the patient laboured under that dreadful symptom called the hydrophobia, which he observed had sometimes appeared in persons who were not previously bit by a mad dog. This conjecture he founded upon the howl he uttered when he was soused with water, and began to recollect certain circumstances of the painter's behaviour for some days past, which now he could plainly perceive had prognosticated some such calamity. He then ascribed the distemper to the violent frights he had lately undergone; affirmed that the affair of the Bastile had made such a violent incroachment upon his understanding, that his manner of thinking and speaking was intirely altered. By a theory of his own invention, he explained the effects of fear upon a loose system of nerves, and demonstrated the modus in which the animal spirits operate upon the ideas and power of imagination.

This disquisition, which was communicated at the painter's door, might have lasted till breakfast, had not Jolter reminded him of his own maxim, *Venienti occurrite morbo*; upon which he put the key to immediate use, and they walked softly towards the bed, where the patient lay extended at full length in the arms of sleep. The physician took notice of his breathing hard, and his mouth being open; and from these diagnostics declared, that the liquidum nervosum was intimately affected, and the saliva impregnated with the spiculated particles of the virus, howsoever contracted. This sentence was still farther confirmed by the state of his pulse, which being full and slow, indicated an oppressed circulation, from a loss of elasticity in the propelling arteries. He proposed that he should immediately suffer a second aspersion of water, which would not only contribute to the cure, but

also certify them beyond all possibility of doubt, with regard to the ſtate of the diſeaſe: for it would evidently appear, from the manner in which he would bear the application, whether or not his horror of water amounted to a confirmed hydrophobia. Mr. Jolter, in compliance with this proposal, began to empty a bottle of water, which he found in the room in a basin; when he was interrupted by the prescriber, who advised him to use the contents of the chamber-pot, which being impregnated with salt, would operate more effectually than pure element. Thus directed, the governor lifted up the veſſel, which was replete with medicine, and with one turn of his hand discharged the whole healing inundation upon the ill-omen'd patient, who waking in the utmoſt diſtraction of horror, yelled moſt hideously, juſt at the time when Peregrine had brought his miſtreſs to a parley, and entertained hopes of being admitted into her chamber.

Terrified at this exclamation, she inſtantly broke off the treaty, beseeching him to retire from the door, that her honour might receive no injury from his being found in that place; and he had juſt enough of recollection left to see the necessity of obeying the order; in conformity to which he retreated well nigh deprived of his senses, and almoſt persuaded, that so many unaccountable disappointments muſt have proceeded from some supernatural cause, of which the idiot Pallet was no more than the involuntary inſtrument.

Mean while, the doctor having ascertained the malady of the patient, whose cries, interrupted by frequent sobs and sighs, he interpreted into the barking of a dog; and having no more salt water at hand, resolved to renew the bath with such materials as chance would afford. He ac-

tually laid hold of the bottle and basin; but by this time the painter had recovered the use of his senses so well, as to perceive his drift; and ſtarting up, like a frantic Bedlamite, ran directly to his sword, swearing with many horrid imprecations, that he would murder them both immediately, if he should be hanged before dinner. They did not choose to wait the iſſue of his threat, but retired with such precipitation, that the physician had almoſt dislocated his shoulder, by running againſt one side of the entry. Jolter having pulled the door after him, and turned the key, betook himself to flight, roaring aloud for aſſiſtance. His colleague seeing the door secured, valued himself upon his resolution, and exhorted him to return; declaring, that for his own part, he was more afraid of the madman's teeth than of his weapon; and admoniſhing the governor to re-enter, and execute what they had left undone. "Go in (said he) without fear or apprehension, and if any accident ſhall happen to you, either from his slaver or his sword, I will aſſiſt you with my advice, which from this ſtation I can more coolly and diſtinctly adminiſter, than I should be able to supply, if my ideas were diſturbed, or my attention engaged in any personal concern."

Jolter, who could make no objection to the juſtness of the conclusion, frankly owned, that he had no inclination to try the experiment; observing, that self preservation was the firſt law of nature; that his connexions with the unhappy lunatic were but slight, and that it could not be reasonably expected, that he would run such risks for his service, as were declined by one who had set out with him from England, on the footing of a companion. This insinuation introduced a dispute upon the nature of benevolence, and the moral sense, which (the

republican argued) existed independent of any private consideration, and could never be affected by any contingent circumstance of time and fortune; while the other, who abhorred his principles, asserted the duties and excellence of private friendship, with infinite rancour of altercation.

During the hottest of the argument, they were joined by the Capuchin, who being astonished to see them thus virulently engaged at the door, and to hear the painter bellowing within the chamber, conjured them, in the name of God, to tell him the cause of that confusion, which had kept the whole house in continual alarm during the best part of the night, and seemed to be the immediate work of the devil and his angels. When the governor gave him to understand, that Pallet was visited with an evil spirit, he muttered a prayer of St. Antonio de Padua, and undertook to cure the painter, provided he could be secured so as that he might, without danger to himself, burn part of a certain relick under his nose, which he assured them was equal to the miraculous power of Eleazar's ring. They expressed great curiosity to know what this treasure was; and the priest was prevailed upon to tell them in confidence, that it was a collection of the pairings of the nails belonging to those two madmen, whom Jesus purged of the legion of devils that afterwards entered the swine. So saying, he pulled from one of his pockets a small box, containing about an ounce of the pairings of an horse's hoof; at sight of which, the governor could not help smiling, on account of the grossness of the imposition. The doctor asked, with a supercilious smile, whether those maniacs whom Jesus cured, were of the sorrel complexion, or dapple grey; for, from the texture of these parings, he could prove, that

the original owners were of the quadruped order, and even diſtinguish, that their feet had been fortified with shoes of iron.

The mendicant, who bore an inveterate grudge againſt this son of Æsculapius, ever since he had made so free with the catholic religion, replied, with great bitterness, that he was a wretch with whom no Christian ought to communicate; that the vengeance of heaven would one day overtake him, on account of his profanity; and that his heart was shod with a metal much harder than iron, which nothing but hell-fire would be able to melt.

It was now broad day, and all the servants of the inn were afoot. Peregrine, seeing it would be impossible to obtain any sort of indemnification for the time he had loſt; and the perturbation of his spirits hindering him from enjoying repose, which was, moreover, obſtructed by the noise of Pallet and his attendants, put on his cloaths at once, and, in exceeding ill humour, arrived at the spot where this triumvirate ſtood debating about the means of overpowering the furious painter, who ſtill continued his song of oaths and execrations, and made sundry efforts to break open the door. Chagrin'd as our hero was, he could not help laughing when he heard how the patient had been treated; and his indignation changing into compassion, he called to him thro' the key-hole, desiring to know the reason of his diſtracted behaviour. Pallet no sooner recognized his voice, than lowering his own to a whimpering tone, "My dear friend! (said he) I have at laſt detected the ruffians who have persecuted me so much. I caught them in the fact of suffocating me with cold water; and by the Lord I will be revenged, or may I never live to finish my Cleopatra. For the love of God! open the door, and I will

make that conceited pagan, that pretender to taſte, that false devotee of the ancients, who poisons people with sillykickabies and devil's dung; I say, I will make him a monument of my wrath, and an example to all the cheats and impoſtors of the faculty: and as for that thick-headed insolent pedant his confederate, who emptied my own jordan upon me while I slept, he had better have been in his beloved Paris botching schemes for his friend the pretender, than incur the effects of my resentment. Gadsbodikins! I won't leave him a wind-pipe for the hangman to ſtop, at the end of another rebellion."

Pickle told him, his conduct had been so extravagant, as to confirm the whole company in the belief, that he was actually deprived of his senses; on which supposition, Mr. Jolter and the doctor had acted the part of friends, in doing that which they thought moſt conducive to his recovery; so that their concern merited his thankful acknowledgment, inſtead of his frantic menaces: that for his own part, he would be the firſt to condemn him, as one utterly bereft of his wits, and give orders for his being secured as a madman, unless he would immediately give a proof of his sanity, by laying aside his sword, composing his spirits, and thanking his injured friends for their care of his person.

This alternative quieted his transports in a moment; he was terrified at the apprehension of being treated like a Bedlamite, being dubious of the ſtate of his own brain; and, on the other hand, had conceived such an horror and antipathy for his tormenters, that, far from believing himself obliged by what they had done, he could not even think of them without the utmoſt rage and deteſtation. He therefore, in the moſt tranquil voice he could assume, proteſted, that he never was less out of his sen-

ses than at present, though he did not know how long he might retain them, if he should be considered in the light of a lunatic: that, in order to prove his being *compos mentis*, he was willing to sacrifice the resentment he so juſtly harboured againſt those who, by their malice, had brought him to this pass: but, as he apprehended, it would be the greateſt sign of madness he could exhibit, to thank them for the mischiefs they had brought upon him, he desired to be excused from making any such concession; and swore he would endure every thing, rather than be guilty of such mean absurdity.

Peregrine held a consultation upon this reply, when the governor and physician ſtrenuously argued againſt any capitulation with a maniac, and proposed that some method might be taken to seize, fetter and convey him into a dark room, where he might be treated according to the rules of art. But the Capuchin underſtanding the circumſtances of the case, undertook to reſtore him to his former ſtate, without having any recourse to such violent measures. Pickle, who was a better judge of the affair than any person present, opened the door without further hesitation, and displayed the poor painter ſtanding with a woeful countenance, shivering in his shirt, which was as wet as if he had been dragged through the Dender: a spectacle which gave such offence to the chaſte eyes of the Hebrew's miſtress, who was by this time one of the spectators, that she turned her head another way, and withdrew to her own room, exclaiming againſt the indecent practices of men.

Pallet, seeing the young gentleman enter, ran to him, and, shaking him by the hand, called him his beſt friend, and said he had rescued him from those who had a design againſt his life. The prieſt would have produced his

parings, and applied them to his nose; but was hindered by Pickle, who advised the patient to shift himself, and put on his cloaths. This being done, with great order and and deliberation, Mr. Jolter, who, with the doctor, had kept a wary distance, in expectation of seeing some strange effects of his distraction, began to believe that he had been guilty of a mistake, and accused the physician of having misled him by his false diagnostic. The doctor still insisted upon his former declaration; assuring him, that although Pallet enjoyed a short interval for the present, the delirium would soon recur, unless they would profit by this momentary calm, and order him to be blooded, blistered and purged with all imaginable dispatch.

The governor, however, notwithstanding this caution, advanced to the injured party, and begg'd pardon for the share he had in giving him such disturbance. He declared, in the most solemn manner, that he had no other intention than that of contributing towards his welfare, and that his behaviour was the result of the physician's prescription, which he affirmed was absolutely necessary for the recovery of his health.

The painter, who had very little gall in his disposition, was satisfied with this apology; but his resentment, which was before divided, now glowed with double fire against his first fellow-traveller, whom he looked upon as the author of all the mischances he had undergone, and marked out for his vengeance accordingly. Yet the doors of reconciliation were not shut against the doctor, who, with great justice, might have transferred this load of offence from himself to Peregrine; who was, without doubt, the source of the painter's misfortune: but, in that case, he must have owned himself mistaken in his medical capacity; and he did not think the friendship

of Pallet important enough to be retrieved by such condescension; so that he resolved to neglect him intirely, and gradually forget the former correspondence he had maintained with a person whom he deemed so unworthy of his notice.

CHAP. LVIII.

Peregrine, *almost distracted with his disappointments, conjures the fair* Fleming *to permit his visits at* Brussels. *She withdraws from his pursuit.*

THINGS being thus adjusted, and all the company dressed, they went to breakfast about five in the morning; and in less than an hour after were seated in the Diligence, where a profound silence prevailed. Peregrine, who used to be the life of the society, being extremely pensive and melancholy, on account of his mishap, the Israelite and his Dulcinea dejected in consequence of their disgrace, the poet absorpt in lofty meditation, the painter in schemes of revenge, while Jolter, rocked by the motion of the carriage, made himself amends for the want of rest he had sustained, and the Mendicant, with his fair charge, were infected by the cloudy aspect of our youth, in whose disappointment each of them, for different reasons, bore no inconsiderable share. This general languor and recess from all bodily exercise, disposed them all to receive the gentle yoke of slumber; and in half an hour after they had embarked, there was not one of them awake, except our hero and his mistress, unless the Capuchin was pleased to counterfeit sleep, in order to indulge our young gentleman with an opportunity of enjoying some private conversation with his beauteous ward.

Peregrine did not neglect the occasion; but, on the contrary, seized the first minute, and, in gentle murmurs, lamented his hard hap in being thus the sport of fortune. He assured her, (and that with great sincerity) that all the cross accidents of his life had not cost him one half of the vexation and keenness of chagrin which he had suffered last night; and that now he was on the brink of parting from her, he should be overwhelmed with the blackest despair, if she would not extend her compassion so far as to give him an opportunity of sighing at her feet in Brussels, during the few days his affairs would permit him to spend in that city.

This young lady, with an air of mortification, expressed her sorrow for being the innocent cause of his anxiety; said, she hoped last night's adventure would be a salutary warning to both their souls; for she was persuaded, that her virtue was protected by the intervention of heaven; that whatever impression it might have made upon him, she was enabled by it to adhere to that duty from which her passion had begun to swerve; and beseeching him to forget her for his own peace, gave him to understand, that neither the plan she had laid down for her own conduct, nor the dictates of her honour, would allow her to receive his visits, or carry on any other correspondence with him, while she was restricted by the articles of her marriage-vow.

This explanation produced such a violent effect upon her admirer, that he was for some minutes deprived of the faculty of speech; which he no sooner recovered, than he gave vent to the most unbridled transports of passion. He taxed her with barbarity and indifference; told her that she had robbed him of his reason and internal peace; that he would follow her to the ends of the

earth, and cease to live sooner than cease to love her; that he would sacrifice the innocent fool who had been the occasion of all this disquiet, and murder every man whom he considered as an obſtruction to his views. In a word, his passions, which had continued so long in a ſtate of the higheſt fermentation, together with the want of that repose which calms and quiets the perturbation of the spirits, had wrought him up to a pitch of real diſtraction. While he uttered these delirious expressions, the tears ran down his cheeks; and he underwent such agitation, that the tender heart of the fair Fleming was affected with his condition; and, while her own face was bedewed with the ſtreams of sympathy, she begged him, for heaven's sake, to be composed; and promised, for his satisfaction, to abate somewhat of the rigor of her purpose. Consoled by this kind declaration, he recollected himself; and, taking out his pencil, gave her his address, when she had assured him, that he should hear from her in four and twenty hours at fartheſt, after their separation.

Thus soothed, he regained the empire of himself, and, by degrees, recovered his serenity. But this was not the case with his Amanda, who, from this sample of his disposition, dreaded the impetuosity of his youth, and was effectually deterred from entering into any engagements that might subject her peace and reputation to the rash effects of such a violent spirit. Though she was captivated by his person and accomplishments, she had reflection enough to foresee, that the longer she countenanced his passion, her own heart would be more and more irretrievably engaged, and the quiet of her life the more exposed to continual interruption. She therefore profited by these considerations, and a sense of religious

honour, which helped her to withſtand the ſuggeſtions of inclination; and reſolved to amuſe her lover with falſe hopes, until ſhe ſhould have it in her power to relinquiſh his converſation, without running any riſk of ſuffering by the inconſiderate ſallies of his love. It was with this view, that ſhe deſired he would not inſiſt upon attending her to her mother's houſe, when the Diligence arrived at Bruſſels; and he, cajoled by her artifice, took a formal leave of her, together with the other ſtrangers, fixing his habitation at the inn to which he and his fellow-travellers had been directed, in the impatient expectation of receiving a kind ſummons from her, within the limited time.

Mean while, in order to divert his imagination, he went to ſee the ſtadthouſe, park and arſenal, took a ſuperficial view of the bookſeller's cabinet of curioſities, and ſpent the evening at the Italian opera, which was at that time exhibited for the entertainment of Prince Charles of Lorrain, then governor of the Low Countries. In ſhort, the ſtated period was almoſt elapſed, when Peregrine received a letter to this purpoſe:

"SIR,

IF you knew what violence I do my own heart, in declaring that I have withdrawn myſelf for ever from your addreſſes, you would ſurely applaud the ſacrifice I make to virtue, and ſtrive to imitate this example of ſelf-denial. Yes, Sir, heaven hath lent me grace to ſtruggle with my guilty paſſion, and henceforth to avoid the dangerous ſight of him who inſpired it. I therefore conjure you, by the regard you ought to have for the eternal welfare of us both, as well as by the eſteem and affection you profeſs, to war with your unruly inclination, and deſiſt

from all attempts of frustrating the laudable resolution I have made. Seek not to invade the peace of one who loves you, to disturb the quiet of a family that never did you wrong, and to alienate the thoughts of a weak woman from a deserving man, who, by the most sacred claim, ought to have the full possession of her heart."

This billet, without either date or subscription, banished all remains of discretion from the mind of our hero, who ran instantly to the landlord in all the extasy of madness, and demanded to see the messenger who brought the letter, on pain of putting his whole family to the sword. The innkeeper, terrified by his looks and menaces, fell upon his knees, protesting, in the face of heaven, that he was utterly ignorant and innocent of any thing that could give him offence, and that the billet was brought by a person whom he did not know, and who retired immediately; saying, it required no answer. He then gave utterance to his fury, in a thousand imprecations and invectives against the writer, whom he dishonoured with the appellations of a coquette, a jilt, an adventurer, who, by means of a pimping priest, had defrauded him of his money. He denounced vengeance against the Mendicant, whom he swore he would destroy, if ever he should set eyes on him again. The painter unluckily appearing during this paroxysm of rage, he seized him by the throat, saying, he was ruined by his accursed folly; and, in all likelihood, poor Pallet would have been strangled, had not Jolter interposed in his behalf, beseeching his pupil to have mercy upon the sufferer, and, with infinite anxiety, desiring to know the cause of this violent assault. He received no answer, but a string of incoherent curses. When the painter, with unspeakable astonishment, took God to witness, that he

had done nothing to disoblige him, the governor began to think, in sad earneſt, that Peregrine's vivacity had at length risen to the transports of actual madness, and was himself almoſt diſtracted with this supposition. That he might the better judge what remedy ought to be applied, he used his whole influence, and practised all his eloquence upon the youth, in order to learn the immediate cause of his delirium. He employed the moſt pathetic intreaties, and even shed tears in the course of his supplication; so that Pickle (the firſt violence of the hurricane being blown over) was ashamed of his own imprudence, and retired to his chamber, in order to recollect his dissipated thoughts: there he shut himself up, and, for the second time, perusing the fatal epiſtle, began to waver in his opinion of the author's character and intention. He sometimes considered her as one of those nymphs who, under the mask of innocence and simplicity, practise upon the hearts and purses of unwary and unexperienced youths: this was the suggeſtion of his wrath, inflamed by disappointment; but, when he reflected upon the circumſtances of her behaviour, and recalled her particular charms to his imagination, the severity of his censure gave way, and his heart declared in favour of her sincerity. Yet even this consideration aggravated the sense of his loss, and he was in danger of relapsing into his former diſtraction, when his passion was a little becalmed by the hope of seeing her again, either by accident, or in the course of a diligent and minute inquiry, which he forthwith resolved to set on foot. He had reason to believe, that her own heart would espouse his cause, in spite of her virtue's determination, and did not despair of meeting with the Capuchin, whose good offices he knew he could at any time command.

Comforted with these reflexions, the tempeſt of his ſoul ſubſided. In leſs than two hours he joined his company, with an air of compoſure, and aſked the painter's forgiveneſs for the freedom he had taken; the cauſe of which he promiſed hereafter to explain. Pallet was glad of being reconciled on any terms to one whoſe countenance ſupported him in æquilibrio with his antagoniſt the doctor; and Mr. Jolter was rejoiced beyond meaſure at his pupil's recovery.

CHAP. LIX.

Peregrine *meets with Mrs.* Hornbeck, *and is conſoled for his loſs. His valet de chambre is embroiled with her duenna, whom, however, he finds means to appeaſe.*

EVERY thing having thus reſumed its natural channel, they dined together in great tranquillity. In the afternoon, Peregrine, on pretence of ſtaying at home to write letters, while his companions were at the coffee-houſe, ordered a coach to be called, and with his valet de chambre, who was the only perſon acquainted with the preſent ſtate of his thoughts, ſet out for the Promenade; to which all the ladies of faſhion reſort in the evening, during the ſummer ſeaſon, in hopes of ſeeing his fugitive among the reſt.

Having made a circuit round the walk, and narrowly obſerved every female in the place he perceived, at ſome diſtance, the livery of Hornbeck upon a lacquey that ſtood at the back of a coach: upon which, he ordered his man to reconnoitre the ſaid carriage, while he pulled up his glaſſes, that he might not be diſcovered, before he ſhould have received ſome intelligence, by which he might conduct himſelf on this unexpected occaſion, that

already began to interfere with the purpose of his coming thither, tho' it could not dispute his attention with the idea of his charming unknown.

His Mercury having made his observations, reported, that there was no body in the coach but Mrs. Hornbeck and an elderly woman, who had all the air of a duenna, and that the servant was not the same footman who had attended them in France. Encouraged by this information, our hero ordered himself to be driven close up to that side of their convenience on which his old mistress sat; and accosted her with the usual salutation. This lady no sooner beheld her gallant, than her cheeks reddened with a double glow; and she exclaimed, "Dear brother, I'm overjoy'd to see you! Pray come into our coach." He took the hint immediately, and, complying with her request, embraced this new sister with great affection.

Perceiving that her attendant was very much surprised and alarmed at this unexpected meeting, she, in order to banish her suspicion, and, at the same time, give her lover his cue, told him that his brother (meaning her husband) was gone to the Spa for a few weeks, by the advice of physicians, on account of his ill state of health; and that, from his last letter, she had the pleasure to tell him, he was in a fair way of doing well. The young gentleman expressed his satisfaction at this piece of news; observing, with an air of fraternal concern, that if his brother had not made too free with his constitution, his friends in England would have had no occasion to repine at his absence and want of health, by which he was banished from his own country and connexions. He then asked, with an affectation of surprise, why she had not accompanied her spouse; and was given to under-

ſtand, that his tenderneſs of affection would not ſuffer him to expoſe her to the fatigues of the journey, which lay among rocks that were almoſt inacceſſible.

The duenna's doubts being eaſed by this preamble of converſation, he changed the ſubject to the pleaſures of the place; and, among other ſuch queſtions, inquired if ſhe had as yet viſited Verſailles? This is a publick-houſe, ſituated upon the canal, at the diſtance of about two miles from town, and accommodated with tolerable gardens for the entertainment of company. When ſhe replied in the negative, he propoſed to accompany her thither immediately; but the governante, who had hitherto ſat ſilent, objected to this propoſal; telling them, in broken Engliſh, that as the lady was under her care, ſhe could not anſwer to Mr. Hornbeck for allowing her to viſit ſuch a ſuſpicious place. "As for that matter, Madam (ſaid the confident gallant) give yourſelf no trouble, the conſequences ſhall be at my peril; and I will undertake to inſure you againſt my brother's reſentment." So ſaying, he directed the coachman to the place, and ordered his own to follow, under the auſpices of his valet de chambre, while the old gentlewoman, over-ruled by his aſſurance, quietly ſubmitted to his authority.

Being arrived at the place, he handed the ladies from the coach, and then, for the firſt time, obſerved that the duenna was lame, a circumſtance of which he did not ſcruple to take the advantage; for they had ſcarce alighted, and drank a glaſs of wine, when he adviſed his ſiſter to enjoy a walk in the garden: and although the attendant made ſhift to keep them almoſt always in view, they enjoyed a detached converſation, in which Peregrine learnt, that the true cauſe of her being left behind at Briſſels, whilſt her huſband proceeded to Spa, was his

dread of the company and familiarities of that place, to which his jealousy durſt not expose her; and that she had lived three weeks in a convent at Lisle, from which she was delivered by his own free motion, because indeed he could no longer exiſt without her company; and laſtly, our lover underſtood, that her governante was a mere dragon, who had been recommended to him by a Spanish merchant, whose wife she attended to her dying day: but she very much queſtioned whether or not her fidelity was proof enough againſt money and ſtrong waters. Peregrine assured her the experiment should be tried before parting; and they agreed to pass the night at Versailles, provided his endeavours should succeed.

Having exercised themselves in this manner, until his duenna's spirits were pretty much exhauſted; that she might be the better disposed to recruit them with a glass of liqueur, they returned to their apartment, and the cordial was recommended and received in a bumper: but as it did not produce such visible alteration as the sanguine hopes of Pickle had made him expect, and the old gentlewoman observed that it began to be late, and that the gates would be shut in a little time, he filled up a parting glass, and pledged her in equal quantity. Her blood was too much chilled to be warmed even by this extraordinary dose, which made immediate innovation in the brain of our youth, who in the gaiety of his imagination overwhelmed this She-Argus with such profusion of gallantry, that she was more intoxicated with his expressions than with the spirits she had drank. When in the course of toying he dropt a purse into her bosom, she seemed to forget how the night wore, and with the approbation of her charge, assented to his proposal of having something for supper.

This was a great point which our adventurer had gained, and yet he plainly perceived that the governante miſtook his meaning, by giving herſelf credit for all the paſſion he had profeſſed. As this error could be rectified by no other means than thoſe of plying her with the bottle, until her diſtinguiſhing faculties ſhould be overpowered, he promoted a quick circulation. She did him juſtice, without any manifeſt ſigns of inebriation, ſo long, that his own eyes began to reel in the ſockets; and he found that before his ſcheme could be accompliſhed, he ſhould be effectually unfitted for all the purpoſes of love. He therefore had recourſe to his valet de chambre, who underſtood the hint as ſoon as it was given, and readily undertook to perform the part, of which his maſter had play'd the prelude. This affair being ſettled to his ſatisfaction, and the night at odds with morning, he took an opportunity of imparting to the ear of this aged Dulcinea a kind whiſper, importing a promiſe of viſiting her, when his ſiſter ſhould be retired to her own chamber, and an earneſt deſire of leaving her door unlocked.

This agreeable intimation being communicated, he conveyed a caution of the ſame nature to Mrs. Hornbeck, as he led her to her apartment; and darkneſs and ſilence no ſooner prevailed in the houſe, than he and his truſty ſquire ſet out on their different voyages. Everything would have ſucceeded according to their wiſh, had not the valet de chambre ſuffered himſelf to fall aſleep at the ſide of his inamorata, and in the agitation of a violent dream, exclaimed in a voice ſo unlike that of her ſuppoſed adorer, that ſhe diſtinguiſhed the difference at once. Waking him with a pinch and a loud ſhriek, ſhe threatened to proſecute him for a rape, and reviled him with all

the epithets her rage and disappointment could suggeſt.

The Frenchman finding himself detected, behaved with great temper and address: he begg'd she would compose herself, on account of her own reputation, which was extremely dear to him; proteſting, that he had a moſt inviolable eſteem for her person. His representations had weight with the duenna, who, upon recollection, comprehended the whole affair, and thought it would be her intereſt to bring matters to an accommodation. She therefore admitted the apologies of her bedfellow, provided he would promise to atone by marriage for the injury she had suſtained; and in this particular he set her heart at ease by repeated vows, which he uttered with surprising volubility, though without any intention to perform the leaſt tittle of their contents.

Peregrine, who had been alarmed by her exclamation, and run to the door with a view of interposing, according to the emergency of the case, over-hearing the affair thus compromised, returned to his miſtress, who was highly entertained with an account of what had passed, foreseeing, that for the future she should be under no difficulty or reſtriction from the severity of her guard.

CHAP. LX.

Hornbeck *is informed of his wife's adventure with* Peregrine, *for whom he prepares a ſtratagem which is rendered ineffectual by the information of* Pipes. *The husband is ducked for his intention, and our hero apprehended by the patrol.*

THERE was another person, however, ſtill ungained; and that was no other than her footman, whose secrecy our hero attempted to secure in the morning by

an handsome present, which he received with many professions of gratitude and devotion to his service; yet this complaisance was nothing but a cloak used to disguise the design he harboured of making his master acquainted with the whole transaction. Indeed this lacquey had been hired, not only as a spy upon his mistress, but also as a check on the conduct of the governante, with promise of ample reward, if ever he should discover any sinister or suspicious practices in the course of their behaviour. As for the footman whom they had brought from England, he was retained in attendance upon the person of his master, whose confidence he had lost, by advising him to gentle methods of reclaiming his lady, when her irregularities had subjected her to his wrath.

The Flemish valet, in consequence of the office he had undertaken, wrote to Hornbeck by the first post, giving an exact detail of the adventure at Versailles, with such a description of the pretended brother, as left the husband no room to think he could be any other person than his first dishonourer; and exasperated him to such a degree, that he resolved to lay an ambush for this invader, and at once disqualify him from disturbing his repose, by maintaining further correspondence with his wife.

Mean while the lovers enjoyed themselves without restraint, and Peregrine's plan of enquiry after his dear Unknown was for the present postponed. His fellow-travellers were confounded at his mysterious motions, which filled the heart of Jolter with anxiety and terror. This careful conductor was fraught with such experience of his pupil's disposition, that he trembled with the apprehension of some sudden accident, and lived in continual alarm, like a man that walks under the wall of a nodding tower. Nor did he enjoy any alleviation of his

fears, when, upon telling the young gentleman, that the reſt of the company were desirous of departing for Antwerp, he answered, they were at liberty to consult their own inclinations; but for his own part, he was resolved to ſtay in Brussels a few days longer. By this declaration the governor was confirmed in the opinion of his having some intrigue upon the anvil. In the bitterness of his vexation, he took the liberty of signifying his suspicion, and reminding him of the dangerous dilemmas to which he had been reduced by his former precipitation.

Peregrine took his caution in good part, and promised to behave with such circumspection as would screen him from any troublesome consequences for the future: but, nevertheless, behaved that same evening in such a manner, as plainly shewed, that his prudence was nothing else than vain speculation. He had made an appointment to spend the night, as usual, with Mrs. Hornbeck; and about nine o'clock haſtened to her lodgings, when he was accoſted in the ſtreet by his old discarded friend Thomas Pipes, who, without any other preamble, told him, that for all he had turned him adrift, he did not choose to see him run full sail into his enemy's harbour, without giving him timely notice of the danger. "I'll tell you what, (said he) mayhap you think I want to curry favour, that I may be taken in tow again; if you do, you have made a miſtake in your reckoning. I am old enough to be laid up, and have wherewithal to keep my planks from the weather. But this here is the affair; I have known you since you were no higher than a marlinspike, and shouldn't care to see you deprived of your rigging at these years: whereby I am informed by Hornbeck's man, whom I this afternoon fell in with by chance, as how his maſter has got intelligence of your boarding his

wife, and has ſteered privately into this port, with a large complement of hands, in order, d'ye see, to ſecure you while you are under the hatches. Now if ſo be as how you have a mind to give him a ſalt eel for his ſupper, here am I without hope of fee or reward, ready to ſtand by you as long as my timbers will ſtick together; and if I expect any recompence, may I be bound to eat oakum and drink bilge water for life."

Startled at this information, Peregrine examined him upon the particulars of his diſcourſe with the lacquey; and when he underſtood that Hornbeck's intelligence flowed from the canal of his Flemiſh footman, he believed every circumſtance of Tom's report, thanked him for this warning, and after having reprimanded him for his misbehaviour at Liſle, aſſured him that it ſhould be his own fault if ever they ſhould part again. He then deliberated with himſelf whether or not he ſhould retort the purpoſe upon his adverſary; but, when he conſidered that Hornbeck was not the aggreſſor, and made that unhappy huſband's caſe his own, he could not help acquitting his intention of revenge; though, in his opinion, it ought to have been executed in a more honourable manner; and therefore he determined to chaſtiſe him for his want of ſpirit. Nothing ſurely can be more inſolent and unjuſt than this determination, which induced him to puniſh a perſon, for his want of courage to redreſs the injury which he himſelf had done to his reputation and peace; and yet this barbarity of deciſion is authorized by the opinion and practice of mankind.

With theſe ſentiments he returned to the inn, and putting a pair of piſtols in his pocket, ordered his valet de chambre and Pipes to follow him at a ſmall diſtance, ſo as that they ſhould be within call in caſe of neceſſity, then poſted himſelf within thirty yards of his Dulcinea's

door. There he had not been above half an hour, when he perceived four men take their ſtation on the other side, with a view, as he guessed, to watch for his going in, that he might be taken unaware. But when they had tarried a considerable time in that corner, without reaping the fruits of their expectation, their leader, persuaded that the gallant had gained admittance by some ſecret means, approached the door with his followers, who, according to the inſtructions they had received, no ſooner saw it opened than they rushed in, leaving their employer in the ſtreet, where he thought his person would be leaſt endangered. Our adventurer seeing him alone, advanced with speed, and clapping a piſtol to his breaſt, commanded him to follow his footſteps, without noise, on pain of immediate death.

Terrified at this sudden apparition, Hornbeck obeyed in silence; and in a few minutes they arrived at the quay, where Pickle halting, gave him to underſtand that he was no ſtranger to his villainous design. Told him that if he conceived himself injured by any circumſtance of his conduct, he would now give him an opportunity of resenting the wrong, in a manner becoming a man of honour. "You have a sword about you, (said he) or if you don't choose to put the affair on that issue, here is a brace of piſtols, take which you please." Such an address could not fail to disconcert a man of his character. After some hesitation, he in a faultering accent denied that his design was to mutilate Mr. Pickle, but that he thought himself entitled to the benefit of the law, by which he would have obtained a divorce, if he could have procured evidence of his wife's infidelity; and with that view he had employed people to take advantage of the information he had received. With regard to his al-

ternative, he declined it intirely, because he could not see what satisfaction he should enjoy, in being shot through the head, or run through the lungs, by a person who had already wronged him in an irreparable manner. Lastly, his fear made him propose, that the affair should be left to the arbitration of two creditable men, altogether unconcerned in the dispute.

To these remonstrances, Peregrine replied, in the style of a hot-headed young man, conscious of his own unjustifiable behaviour, that every gentleman ought to be a judge of his own honour; and therefore he would submit to the decision of no umpire whatsoever; that he would forgive his want of courage, which might be a natural infirmity, but his mean dissimulation he could not pardon: that, as he was certified of the rascally intent of his ambuscade, by undoubted intelligence, he would treat him, not with a retaliation of his own treachery, but with such indignity as a scoundrel deserves to suffer; unless he would make one effort to maintain the character he assumed in life; so saying, he again presented his pistol, which being rejected as before, he called his two ministers, and ordered them to duck him in the canal.

This command was pronounced and executed almost in the same breath, to the unspeakable terror and disorder of the poor shivering patient, who, having undergone the immersion, ran about like a drowned rat, squeaking for assistance and revenge. His cries were overheard by the patrole, which, chancing to pass that way, took him under their protection, and, in consequence of his complaint and information, went in pursuit of our adventurer and his attendants, who were soon overtaken and surrounded. Rash and inconsiderate

as the young gentleman was, he did not pretend to ſtand upon the defenſive, againſt a file of musketeers, although Pipes had drawn his cutlass at their approach, but surrendered himself without opposition, and was conveyed to the main guard, where the commanding officer, engaged by his appearance and address, treated him with all imaginable reſpect. Hearing the particulars of his adventure, he assured him, that the prince would consider the whole as a *Tour de jeunesse*, and order him to be released without delay.

Next morning, when this gentleman gave in his report, he made such a favourable representation of the prisoner, that our hero was on the point of being discharged; when Hornbeck preferred a complaint, accusing him of a purposed assassination, and praying that such punishment should be inflicted upon him, as his highness should think adequate to the nature of the crime. The prince, perplexed with this petition, in consequence of which he foresaw, that he muſt disoblige a British subject, sent for the plaintiff, of whom he had some knowledge, and in person exhorted him to drop the prosecution, which would only serve to propagate his own shame. But Hornbeck was too much incensed to liſten to any proposal of that kind, and peremptorily demanded juſtice againſt the prisoner, whom he represented as an obscure adventurer, who had made repeated attempts upon his honour and his life. Prince Charles told him that what he had advised was in the capacity of a friend, but, since he insiſted upon his acting as a magiſtrate, the affair should be examined, and determined according to the dictates of juſtice and truth.

The petitioner being dismissed with this promise, the defendant was in his turn brought before the judge,

whose prepossession in his favour was in a great measure weakened by what his antagonist had said to the prejudice of his birth and reputation.

CHAP. LXI.

Peregrine *is released.* Jolter *confounded at his mysterious conduct. A contest happens between the poet and painter, who are reconciled by the mediation of their fellow travellers.*

OUR hero, understanding from some expressions which escaped the prince, that he was considered in the light of a sharper and assassin, begged that he might have the liberty of sending for some vouchers, that would probably vindicate his character from the malicious aspersions of his adversary. This permission being granted, he wrote a letter to his governor, desiring that he would bring to him the letters of recommendation which he had received from the British embassador at Paris, and such other papers as he thought conducive to evince the importance of his situation.

The billet was given in charge to one of the subaltern officers on duty, who carried it to the inn, and demanded to speak with Mr. Jolter. Pallet, who happened to be at the door, when this messenger arrived, and heard him enquire for the tutor, ran directly to that gentleman's apartment, and in manifest disorder told him that a huge fellow of a soldier, with a monstrous pair of whiskers, and a fur cap, as big as a bushel, was asking for him at the door. The poor governor began to shake at this intimation, though he was not conscious of having committed any thing that could attract the attention of the state. When the officer appeared at his chamber-

door, his confusion increased to such a degree, that his perception seemed to vanish, and the subaltern repeated the purport of his errand three times, before he could comprehend his meaning, or venture to receive the letter which he presented. At length, he summoned all his fortitude, and having perused the epistle, his terror sunk into anxiety. His ingenious fear immediately suggested, that Peregrine was confined in a dungeon, for some outrage he had committed. He ran with great agitation to a trunk, and taking out a bundle of papers, followed his conductor, being attended by the painter, to whom he had hinted his apprehension. When they passed through the guard which was under arms, the hearts of both died within them, and when they came into the presence, there was such an expression of awful horror on the countenance of Jolter, that the prince observing his dismay, was pleased to encourage him with an assurance, that he had nothing to fear. Thus comforted, he recollected himself so well as to understand his pupil, when he desired him to produce the Embassador's letters; some of which being open, were immediately read by his highness, who was personally acquainted with the writer, and knew several of the noblemen to whom they were addressed. These recommendations were so warm, and represented the young gentleman in such an advantageous light, that the prince, convinced of the injustice his character had suffered by the misrepresentation of Hornbeck, took our hero by the hand, asked pardon for the doubts he had entertained of his honour, declared him from that moment at liberty, ordered his domesticks to be enlarged, and offered him his countenance and protection, as long as he should remain in the Austrian Netherlands. At the same time, he

cautioned him against indiscretions in the course of his gallantries; and took his word and honour that he should drop all measures of resentment against the person of Hornbeck, during his residence in that place.

The delinquent, thus honourably acquitted, thanked the prince in the most respectful manner, for his generosity and candour, and retired with his two friends, who were amazed and bewildered in their thoughts, at what they had seen and heard, the whole adventure still remaining without the sphere of their comprehension, which was not at all enlarged by the unaccountable appearance of Pipes, who, with the valet de chambre, joined them at the castle gate. Had Jolter been a man of a luxuriant imagination, his brain would undoubtedly have suffered in the investigation of his pupil's mysterious conduct, which he strove in vain to unravel; but his intellects were too solid to be affected by the miscarriage of his invention; and as Peregrine did not think proper to make him acquainted with the cause of his being apprehended, he contented himself with supposing, that there was a lady in the case.

The painter, whose imagination was of a more flimsy texture, formed a thousand chimerical conjectures, which he communicated to Pickle, in imperfect insinuations; hoping, by his answers and behaviour, to discover the truth; but the youth, in order to tantalize him, eluded all his enquiries, with such appearance of industry and art, as heightened his curiosity, while it disappointed his aim, and inflamed him to such a degree of impatience, that his wits began to be unsettled. Then Peregrine was fain to recompose his brain, by telling him in confidence, that he had been arrested as a spy. This secret he found more intolerable than his former uncertain-

ty; he ran from one apartment to another, like a goose in the agonies of egg-laying, with intention of disburdening this important load; but, Jolter being engaged with his pupil, and all the people of the house ignorant of the only language he could speak, he was compelled, with infinite reluctance, to address himself to the doctor, who was at that time shut up in his own chamber. Having knocked at the door to no purpose, he peeped through the key-hole, and saw the physician sitting at a table, with a pen in one hand, and paper before him, his head reclined upon his other hand, and his eyes fixed upon the ceiling, as if he had been intranced. Pallet, concluding that he was under the power of some convulsion, endeavoured to force the door open; and the noise of his efforts recalled the doctor from his reverie. This poetical republican, being so disagreeably disturbed, started up in a passion, and opening the door, no sooner perceived who had interrupted him, than he flung it in his face with great fury, and cursed him for his impertinent intrusion, which had deprived him of the most delightful vision that ever regaled the human fancy. He imagined (as he afterwards imparted to Peregrine) that as he enjoyed himself in walking thro' the flowery plain that borders on Parnassus, he was met by a venerable sage, whom, by a certain divine vivacity that lightened from his eyes, he instantly knew to be the immortal Pindar. He was immediately struck with reverence and awe, and prostrated himself before the apparition, which taking him by the hand, lifted him gently from the ground; and, with words more sweet than the honey of the Hybla bees, told him, that of all the moderns, he alone was visited by that celestial impulse by which himself had been inspired, when he produced his most ap-

plauded odes. So saying, he led him up the sacred hill, persuaded him to drink a copious draught of the waters of the Hippocrene, and then presented him to the harmonious nine, who crowned his temples with a laurel-wreath.

No wonder that he was enraged to find himself cut off from such sublime society. He raved in Greek againſt the invader, who was so big with his own purpose, that, unmindful of the disgrace he had suſtained, and disregarding all the symptoms of the physician's displeasure, he applied his mouth to the door, in an eager tone, "I'll hold you any wager (said he) that I guess the true cause of Mr. Pickle's imprisonment." To this challenge he received no reply; and therefore repeated it, adding, "I suppose you imagine he was taken up for fighting a duel, or affronting a nobleman, or lying with some man's wife, or some such matter; but, egad! you was never more miſtaken in your life; and I'll lay my Cleopatra againſt your Homer's head, that in four and twenty hours you shan't light on the true reason."

The favourite of the muses, exasperated at this vexatious perseverance of the painter, who he imagined had come to teize and insult him, "I would (said he) sacrifice a cock to Æsculapius, were I assured that any person had been taken up for extirpating such a troublesome Goth as you are from the face of the earth. As for your boaſted Cleopatra, which you say was drawn from your own wife, I believe the copy has as much of the το καλον, as the original. But, were it mine, it should be hung up in the temple of Cloacina, as the picture of that goddess; for any other apartment would be disgraced by its appearance." "Heark ye, Sir, (replied Pallet, inraged in his turn at this contemptuous mention of his darling per-

formance) you may make as free with my wife as you think proper; but 'ware my works; those are the children of my fancy, conceived by the glowing imagination, and formed by the art of my own hands: and you yourself are a Goth, and a Turk, and a Tartar, and an impudent pretending jackanapes, to treat with such disrespect a production which, in the opinion of all the connoisseurs of the age, will, when finished, be a masterpiece in its kind, and do honour to human genius and skill. So I say again and again, (and I care not though your friend Playtor heard me) that you have no more taste than a drayman's horse, and that those foolish notions of the ancients ought to be drubb'd out of you with a good cudgel, that you might learn to treat men of parts with more veneration. Perhaps you may not always be in the company of one who will hollow for assistance, when you are on the brink of being chastised for your insolence, as I did, when you brought upon yourself the resentment of that Scot, who, by the Lard! would have paid you both scot and lot, as Falstaff says, if the French officer had not put him in arrest."

The physician, to this declamation, which was conveyed through the key-hole, answered, that he (the painter) was a fellow so infinitely below his consideration, that his conscience upbraided him with no action of his life, except that of choosing such a wretch for his companion and fellow-traveller. That he had viewed his character through the medium of good nature and compassion, which had prompted him to give Pallet an opportunity of acquiring some new ideas under his immediate instruction; but he had abused his goodness and condescension in such a flagrant manner, that he was now determined to discard him intirely from his ac-

quaintance, and desired him, for the present, to take himself away, on pain of being kicked for his presumption.

Pallet was too much incensed to be intimidated by this threat, which he retorted with great virulence, defying him to come forth, that it might appear which of them was beſt skilled in that pedeſtrian exercise, which he immediately began to practiſe againſt the door with such thundering application, as reached the ears of Pickle and his governor, who coming out into the passage, and seeing him thus employed, asked if he had forgot the chamber-pots of Aloſt, that he ventured to behave in such a manner, as intitled him to a second prescription of the same nature.

The doctor underſtanding that there was company at hand, opened the door in a twinkling; and springing upon his antagoniſt, like a tyger, a fierce contention would have ensued, to the infinite satisfaction of our hero, had not Jolter, to the manifeſt peril of his own person, interposed, and partly by force, and partly by exhortations, put a ſtop to the engagement before it was fairly begun. After having demonſtrated the indecency of such a vulgar rencounter betwixt two fellow-citizens in a foreign land, he begg'd to know the cause of their dissention, and offered his good offices towards an accommodation. Peregrine also, seeing the fray was finished, expreſt himself to the same purpose; and the painter, for obvious reasons, declining an explanation, his antagoniſt told the youth what a mortifying interruption he had suffered by the impertinent intrusion of Pallet, and gave him a detail of the particulars of his vision, as above recited. The arbiter owned, the provocation was not to be endured; and decreed, that the offender should make some atonement for his transgression. Upon

which, the painter observed, that howsoever he might have been disposed to make acknowledgments, if the physician had signified his displeasure like a gentleman, the complainant had now forfeited all claim to any such concessions, by the vulgar manner in which he had reviled him and his productions; observing that if he (the painter) had been inclined to retort his slandrous insinuations, the republican's own works would have afforded ample subject for his ridicule and censure.

After divers disputes and representations, peace was at length concluded, on condition, that, for the future, the doctor should never mention Cleopatra, unless he could say something in her praise; and that Pallet, in consideration of his having been the first aggressor, should make a sketch of the physician's vision, to be engraved and prefixed to the next edition of his odes.

CHAP. LXII.

The travellers depart for Antwerp, *at which place the painter gives a loose to his enthusiasm.*

OUR adventurer, baffled in all his efforts to retrieve his lost Amanda, yielded at length to the remonstrances of his governor and fellow-travellers, who, out of pure complaisance to him, had exceeded their intended stay by six days at least: and a couple of post-chaises, with three riding-horses, being hired, they departed from Brussels in the morning, dined at Mechlin, and arrived about eight in the evening at the venerable city of Antwerp. During this day's journey, Pallet was elevated to an uncommon flow of spirits, with the prospect of seeing the birthplace of Rubens, for whom he professed an enthusiastic admiration. He swore, that the

pleasure he felt was equal to that of a Mussulman, on the laſt day of his pilgrimage to Mecca; and that he already considered himself a native of Antwerp, being so intimately acquainted with their so juſtly boaſted citizen, from whom, at certain junctures, he could not help believing himself derived, because his own pencil adopted the manner of that great man with surprising facility, and his face wanted nothing but a pair of whiskers and a beard to exhibit the express image of the Fleming's countenance. He told them he was so proud of this resemblance, that, in order to render it more ſtriking, he had at one time of his life resolved to keep his face sacred from the razor; and in that purpose had persevered, notwithſtanding the continual reprehensions of Mrs. Pallet, who being then with child, said, his aſpect was so hideous, that she dreaded a miscarriage every hour, until she threatened, in plain terms, to dispute the sanity of his intellects, and apply to the chancellor for a committee.

The doctor, on this occasion, observed, that a man who is not proof againſt the solicitations of a woman, can never expect to make a great figure in life; that painters and poets ought to cultivate no wives but the muses; or if they are, by the accidents of fortune, incumbered with families, they should carefully guard against that pernicious weakness, falsely honoured with the appellation of *natural affection*, and pay no manner of regard to the impertinent cuſtoms of the world. "Granting that you had been, for a short time, deemed a lunatic (said he) you might have acquitted yourself honourably of that imputation, by some performance that would have raised your character above all censure. Sophocles himself, that celebrated tragic poet, who, for the sweetness of his versification, was ſtiled *μέλιττα*, or *the bee*, in his old

age suffered the same accusation from his own children, who seeing him neglect his family affairs, and devote himself intirely to poetry, carried him before the magistrate, as a man whose intellects were so much impaired by the infirmities of age, that he was no longer fit to manage his domestic concerns; upon which the reverend bard produced his tragedy of *Οιδιπους επι κολωνω* as a work he had just finished; which being perused, instead of being declared unsound of understanding, he was dismissed with admiration and applause. I wish your beard and whiskers had been sanctioned by the like authority; though I am afraid you would have been in the predicament of those disciples of a certain philosopher, who drank decoctions of cummin seeds, that their faces might adopt the paleness of their master's complexion, hoping, that in being as wan, they would be as learned as their teacher." The painter, stung with this sarcasm, replied, "or like those Virtuosi, who by repeating Greek, eating sillikickaby, and pretending to see visions, think they equal the ancients in taste and genius." The physician retorted, Pallet rejoined, and the altercation continued, until they entered the gates of Antwerp, when the admirer of Rubens broke forth into a rapturous exclamation, which put an end to the dispute, and attracted the notice of the inhabitants, many of whom, by shrugging up their shoulders, and pointing to their foreheads, gave shrewd indications, that they believed him a poor gentleman disordered in his brain.

They had no sooner alighted at the inn, than this pseudo-enthusiast proposed to visit the great church, in which he had been informed some of his master's pieces were to be seen; and was remarkably chagrined, when he understood that he could not be admitted till next

day. He rose next morning by day-break, and disturbed his fellow-travellers in such a noisy and clamorous manner, that Peregrine determined to punish him with some new infliction; and while he put on his cloaths, actually formed the plan of promoting a duel between him and the doctor; in the management of which, he promised himself store of entertainment, from the behaviour of both.

Being provided with one of those domestics who are always in waiting to offer their services to strangers on their first arrival, they were conducted to the house of a gentleman who had an excellent collection of pictures; and though the greatest part of them were painted by his favourite artist, Pallet condemned them all by the lump, because Pickle had told him beforehand, that there was not one performance of Rubens among the number.

The next place they visited, was what is called the academy of painting, furnished with a number of paultry pieces, in which our painter recognized the stile of Peter Paul, with many expressions of admiration, on the same sort of previous intelligence.

From this repository, they went to the great church; and being led to the tomb of Rubens, the whimsical painter fell upon his knees, and worshipped, with such appearance of devotion, that the attendant, scandalized at his superstition, pulled him up; observing, with great warmth, that the person buried in that place was no saint, but as great a sinner as himself; and that if he was spiritually disposed, there was a chapel of the Blessed Virgin, at the distance of three yards on the right hand, to which he might retire. He thought it was incumbent upon him to manifest some extraordinary inspiration, while he resided on the spot where Rubens was born;

and therefore his whole behaviour was an affectation of rapture, expressed in distracted exclamations, convulsive starts, and uncouth gesticulations. In the midst of his frantic behaviour, he saw an old Capuchin with a white beard, mount the pulpit, and hold forth to the congregation with such violence of emphasis and gesture, as captivated his fancy; and bawling aloud, "Zounds! what an excellent Paul preaching at Athens!" he pulled a pencil and a small memorandum-book from his pocket, and began to take a sketch of the orator, with great eagerness and agitation, saying, "Egad! friend Raphael, we shall see whether you or I have got the best knack at trumping up an Apostle." This appearance of disrespect gave offence to the audience, which began to murmur against this heretic libertine; when one of the priests belonging to the choir, in order to prevent any ill consequence from their displeasure, came and told him in the French language, that such liberties were not permitted in their religion, and advised him to lay aside his implements, lest the people should take umbrage at his design, and be provoked to punish him as a profane scoffer at their worship.

The painter seeing himself addressed by a friar who, while he spoke, bowed with great complaisance, imagined that he was a begging brother, come to supplicate his charity; and his attention being quite ingrossed by the design he was making, he patted the priest's shaven crown with his hand; saying, *Oter tems*, *oter tems*; and then resumed his pencil with great earnestness. The ecclesiastic perceiving that the stranger did not comprehend his meaning, pulled him by the sleeve, and explained himself in the Latin tongue: upon which Pallet, provoked at his intrusion, cursed him aloud for an im-

pudent beggarly son of a whore; and taking out a shilling, flung it upon the pavement, with manifeſt signs of indignation.

Some of the common people, enraged to see their religion contemned, and their prieſts insulted at the very altar, rose from their seats; and surrounding the astonished painter, one of the number snatched his book from his hand, and tore it into a thousand pieces. Frightened as he was, he could not help crying, "Fire and faggots! all my favourite ideas are gone to wreck!" and was in danger of being very roughly handled by the croud, had not Peregrine ſtepped in, and assured them, that he was a poor unhappy gentleman, who laboured under a transport of the brain. Those who underſtood the French language communicated this information to the reſt; so that he escaped without any other chaſtisement, than that of being obliged to retire. And as they could not see the famous descent from the cross till after the service was finished, they were conducted by their domeſtique to the house of a painter, where they found a beggar ſtanding for his picture, and the artiſt actually employed in representing a huge louse that crawled upon his shoulder. Pallet was wonderfully pleased with this circumſtance, which he said was altogether a new thought, and an excellent hint, of which he would make his advantage: and in the course of his survey of this Fleming's performances, perceiving a piece in which two flies were engaged upon the carcass of a dog half devoured, he ran to his brother brush, and swore he was worthy of being a fellow-citizen of the immortal Rubens. He then lamented, with many expressions of grief and resentment, that he had loſt his common place-book in which he had preserved a thousand conceptions of the

same sort, formed by the accidental objects of his senses and imagination; and took an opportunity of telling his fellow-travellers, that in execution he had equalled, if not excelled, the two antient painters who vied with each other in the representation of a curtain and a bunch of grapes; for he had exhibited the image of a certain object so like to nature, that the bare sight of it set a whole hogsty in an uproar.

When he had examined and applauded all the productions of this minute artist, they returned to the great church, and were entertained with the view of that celebrated master-piece of Rubens, in which he has introduced the portraits of himself and his whole family. The doors that conceal this capital performance were no sooner unfolded than our enthusiast, debarred the use of speech, by a previous covenant with his friend Pickle, lifted up his hands and eyes, and putting himself in the attitude of Hamlet, when his father's ghost appears, adored in silent extasy and awe. He even made a merit of necessity; and when they had withdrawn from the place, protested that his whole faculties were swallowed up in love and admiration. He now professed himself more than ever enamoured of the Flemish school raved in extravagant encomiums, and proposed that the whole company should pay homage to the memory of the divine Rubens, by repairing forthwith to the house in which he lived, and prostrating themselves on the floor of his painting room.

As there was nothing remarkable in the tenement, which had been rebuilt more than once since the death of that great man, Peregrine excused himself from complying with the proposal; on pretence of being fatigued with the circuit they had already performed. Jolter de-

clined it for the same reason; and the question being put to the doctor, he refused his company with an air of disdain. Pallet, piqued at his contemptuous manner, asked if he would not go and see the habitation of Pindoor, provided he was in the city where that poet lived? And when the physician observed, that there was an infinite difference between the men; "That I'll allow, (replied the painter) for the devil a poet ever lived in Greece or Troy, that was worthy to clean the pencils of our beloved Rubens." The physician could not with any degree of temper and forbearance hear this outrageous blasphemy, for which, he said, Pallet's eyes ought to be picked out by owls: and the dispute arose, as usual, to such scurrilities of language and indecency of behaviour, that passengers began to take notice of their animosity; and Peregrine was obliged to interpose, for his own credit.

CHAP. LXIII.

Peregrine *artfully foments a quarrel between* Pallet *and the physician, who fight a duel on the ramparts.*

THE painter betook himself to the house of the Flemish Raphael, and the rest of the company went back to their lodgings; where the young gentleman, taking the advantage of being alone with the physician, recapitulated all the affronts he had sustained from the painter's petulance, aggravating every circumstance of the disgrace, and advising him, in the capacity of a friend, to take care of his honour, which could not fail to suffer in the opinion of the world, if he allowed himself to be insulted with impunity, by one so much his inferior in every degree of consideration.

The physician assured him, that Pallet had hitherto escaped chastisement, by being deemed an object unworthy his resentment, and in consideration of the wretch's family, for which his compassion was interested; but, that repeated injuries would inflame the most benevolent disposition: and although he could find no precedent of duelling among the Greeks and Romans, whom he considered as the patterns of demeanour, Pallet should no longer avail himself of his veneration for the ancients, but be punished for the very next offence he should commit.

Having thus spirited up the doctor to a resolution from which he could not decently swerve, our adventurer acted the incendiary with the other party also; giving him to understand, that the physician treated his character with such contempt, and behaved to him with such insolence, as no gentleman ought to bear: that for his own part, he was every day put out of countenance by their mutual animosity, which appeared in nothing but vulgar expressions, more becoming shoe-boys and oyster-women than men of honour and education; and therefore he should be obliged, contrary to his inclination, to break off all correspondence with them both, if they would not fall upon some method to retrieve the dignity of their characters.

These representations would have had little effect upon the timidity of the painter, who was like wise too much of a Grecian to approve of single combat, in any other way than that of boxing, an exercise in which he was well skill'd, had not they been accompanied with an insinuation, that his antagonist was no Hector, and that he might humble him into any concession, without running the least personal risk. Animated by this assurance,

our second Rubens set the trumpet of defiance to his mouth, swore that he valued not his life a rush, when his honour was concerned, and intreated Mr. Pickle to be the bearer of a challenge, which he would instantly commit to writing.

The mischievous fomentor highly applauded this manifestation of courage, by which he was at liberty to cultivate his friendship and society; but declined the office of carrying the billet, that his tenderness of Pallet's reputation might not be misinterpreted into an officious desire of promoting quarrels. At the same time he recommended Tom Pipes, not only as a very proper messenger on this occasion, but also as a trusty second in the field. The magnanimous painter took his advice, and retiring to his chamber, penn'd a challenge in these terms.

SIR,

WHEN I am heartily provoked, I fear not the devil himself; much less—— I will not call you a pedantic coxcomb, nor an unmannerly fellow, because these are the hippythets of the wulgar: but, remember, such as you are, I neyther love you nor fear you; but, on the contrary, expect satisfaction for your audacious behaviour to me, on divers occasions; and will, this evening, in the twilight, meet you on the ramparts with sword and pistol, where the Lord have mercy on the soul of one of us; for your body shall find no favour with your incensed defier, till death,

LAYMAN PALLET.

This resolute defiance, after having been submitted to the perusal, and honoured with the approbation of

our youth, was committed to the charge of Pipes, who, according to his orders, delivered it in the afternoon; and brought for answer, that the physician would attend him at the appointed time and place. The challenger was evidently discomposed at the unexpected news of this acceptance, and ran about the house in great disorder, in quest of Peregrine, to beg his further advice and assistance; but understanding that the youth was engaged in private with his adversary, he began to suspect some collusion, and cursed himself for his folly and precipitation. He even entertained some thoughts of retracting his invitation, and submitting to the triumph of his antagonist: but, before he would stoop to this opprobrious cendescension, he resolved to try another expedient which might be the means of saving both his character and person. In this hope he visited Mr. Jolter, and very gravely desired he would be so good as to undertake the office of his second, in a duel which he was to fight that evening with the physician.

The governor, instead of answering his expectation, in expressing fear and concern, and breaking forth into exclamations of "Good God! gentlemen, what d'ye mean? You shall not murther one another while it is in my power to prevent your purpose. I will go directly to the governor of the place, who shall interpose his authority." I say, instead of these and other friendly menaces of prevention, Jolter heard the proposal with the most phlegmatic tranquillity, and excused himself from accepting the honour he intended for him, on account of his character and situation, which would not permit him to be concerned in any such rencounters. Indeed this mortifying reception was owing to a previous hint from Peregrine, who dreading some sort of interruption from

his governor, had made him acquainted with his design, and assured him, that the affair should not be brought to any dangerous issue.

Thus disappointed, the dejected challenger was overwhelmed with perplexity and dismay; and in the terrors of death or mutilation, resolved to deprecate the wrath of his enemy, and conform to any submission he should propose: when he was accidentally encountered by our adventurer, who with demonstrations of infinite satisfaction, told him in confidence, that his billet had thrown the doctor into an agony of consternation; that his acceptance of his challenge was a meer effort of despair, calculated to confound the ferocity of the sender, and dispose him to listen to terms of accommodation: that he had imparted the letter to him with fear and trembling, on pretence of engaging him as a second, but in reality, with a view of obtaining his good offices in promoting a reconciliation; "but, perceiving the situation of his mind, (added our hero) I thought it would be more for your honour to baffle his expectation; and therefore I readily undertook the task of attending him to the field, in full assurance, that he will there humble himself before you, even to prostration. In this security, you may go and prepare your arms, and bespeak the assistance of Pipes, who will squire you in the field, while I keep myself up, that our correspondence may not be suspected by the physician." Pallet's spirits, that were sunk to dejection, rose at this encouragement to all the insolence of triumph; he again declaring his contempt of danger, and his pistols being loaded and accommodated with new flints, by his trusty armour-bearer, he waited, without flinching, for the hour of battle.

On the first approach of twilight, somebody knocked

at his door, and Pipes having opened it at his desire, he heard the voice of his antagonist pronounce, "Tell Mr. Pallet, that I am going to the place of appointment." The painter was not a little surprized at this anticipation, which so ill agreed with the information he had received from Pickle; and his concern beginning to recur, he fortified himself with a large bumper of brandy, which, however, did not overcome the anxiety of his thoughts. Nevertheless, he set out on the expedition with his second, betwixt whom and himself the following dialogue passed, in their way to the ramparts. "Mr. Pipes, (said the painter, with disordered accent) methinks the doctor was in a pestilent hurry with that message of his." "Ey, ey, (answered Tom) I do suppose he longs to be foul of you." "What! (replied the other) d'ye think he thirsts after my blood?" "To be sure a does," (said Pipes, thrusting a large quid of tobacco in his cheek, with great deliberation.) "If that be the case, (cried Pallet, beginning to shake) he is no better than a Cannibal, and no Christian ought to fight him on equal footing." Tom observing his emotion, eyed him with a frown of indignation, saying, "You an't afraid, are you?" "God forbid! (replied the challenger, stammering with fear.) What should I be afraid of? The worst he can do is to take my life, and then he'll be answerable both to God and man for the murder: Don't you think he will?" "I think no such matter, (answered the second) if so be as how he puts a brace of bullets through your bows, and kills you fairly, it is no more murder than if I was to bring down a noddy from the main-top-sail-yard." By this time Pallet's teeth chattered with such violence, that he could scarce pronounce this reply, "Mr Thomas, you seem to make very light of a man's life; but I trust in the Al-

mighty, I shall not be so easily brought down. Sure many a man has fought a duel, without losing his life. Do you imagine that I run such a hazard of falling by the hand of my adversary?" "You may, or you may not, (said the unconcerned Pipes) just as it happens. What then? Death is a debt that every man owes, according to the song; and if you set foot to foot, I think one of you must go to pot." "Foot to foot! (exclaimed the terrified painter) that's downright butchery; and I'll be damn'd before I fight any man on earth in such a barbarous way. What! d'ye take me to be a savage beast?" This declaration he made while they ascended the ramparts. His attendant perceiving the physician and his second at the distance of an hundred paces before them, gave him notice of their appearance, and advised him to make ready, and behave like a man. Pallet in vain endeavoured to conceal his pannic, which discovered itself in an universal trepidation of body, and the lamentable tone in which he answered this exhortation of Pipes, saying, "I do behave like a man; but you would have me act the part of a brute. Are they coming this way?" When Tom told him that they had faced about, and admonished him to advance, the nerves of his arm refused their office, he could not hold out his pistol, and instead of going forward, retreated with an insensibility of motion; till Pipes, placing himself in the rear, set his own back to that of his principal, and swore he should not budge an inch farther in that direction.

While the valet thus tutored the painter, his master enjoyed the terrors of the physician, which were more ridiculous than those of Pallet, because he was more intent upon disguising them. His declaration to Pickle in the morning, would not suffer him to start any objec-

tions when he received the challenge; and finding that the young gentleman made no offer of mediating the affair, but rather congratulated him on the occasion, when he communicated the painter's billet, all his efforts consisted in oblique hints, and general reflections upon the absurdity of duelling, which was first introduced among civilized nations, by the barbarous Huns and Longobards. He likewise pretended to ridicule the use of fire-arms, which confounded all the distinctions of skill and address, and deprived a combatant of the opportunity of signalizing his personal prowess.

Pickle assented to the justness of his observations; but at the same time represented the necessity of complying with the customs of the world, (ridiculous as they were) on which a man's honour and reputation depend. So that, seeing no hopes of profiting by that artifice, the republican's agitation became more and more remarkable; and he proposed in plain terms, that they should contend in armour, like the combatants of ancient days; for it was but reasonable, that they should practise the manner of fighting, since they adopted the disposition of those iron times.

Nothing could have afforded more diversion to our hero, than the sight of two such duellists cased in iron; and he wished that he had promoted the quarrel in Brussels, where he could have hired the armour of Charles the fifth; and the valiant duke of Parma, for their accommodation: but as there was no possibility of furnishing them cap-a-pee at Antwerp, he persuaded him to conform to the modern use of the sword, and meet the painter on his own terms; and suspecting that his fear would supply him with other excuses for declining the combat, he comforted him with some distant in-

sinuations to the prejudice of his adversary's courage, which would, in all probability, evaporate, before any mischief could happen.

Notwithſtanding this encouragement, he could not suppress the reluctance with which he went to the field, and caſt many a wishful look over his left shoulder, to see whether or not his adversary was at his heels. When, by the advice of his second, he took possession of the ground, and turned about with his face to the enemy, it was not so dark, but that Peregrine could perceive the unusual paleness of his countenance, and the sweat ſtanding in large drops upon his forehead; nay, there was a manifeſt disorder in his speech, when he regretted his want of the Pila and Parma, with which he would have made a rattling noise, to aſtonish his foe, in springing forward, and singing the hymn to battle, in the manner of the ancients.

In the mean time, observing the hesitation of his antagoniſt, who, far from advancing, seemed to recoil, and even ſtruggle with his second, he guessed the situation of the painter's thoughts; and collecting all the manhood that he possessed, seized the opportunity of profiting by his enemy's conſternation. Striking his sword and pistol together, he advanced in a sort of trot, raising a loud howl, in which he repeated, in lieu of the Spartan song, part of the ſtrophe from one of Pindar's Pythia, beginning with *ek theon gar makanai pasai Broteais aretais*, &c. This imitation of the Greeks had all the desired effect upon the painter, who seeing the physician running towards him like a fury, with a piſtol in his right hand, which was extended, and hearing the dreadful yell he uttered, and the outlandish words he pronounced, was seized with an universal palsy of his

limbs. He would have dropped down upon the ground, had not Pipes supported and encouraged him to ſtand upon his defence. The doctor, contrary to his expectation, finding that he had not flinched from the spot, though he had now performed one half of his career, put in practice his laſt effort, by firing his piſtol, the noiſe of which no ſooner reached the ears of the affrighted painter, than he recommended his ſoul to God, and roared for mercy with great vociferation.

The republican, overjoyed at this exclamation, commanded him to yield, and ſurrender his arms, on pain of immediate death; upon which he threw away his piſtols and ſword, in ſpite of all the admonitions and even threats of his ſecond, who left him to his fate, and went up to his maſter, ſtopping his noſe with ſigns of loathing and abhorrence.

The victor having won the Spolia Opima, granted him his life, on condition, that he would on his knees ſupplicate his pardon, acknowledge himſelf inferior to his conqueror in every virtue and qualification, and promiſe for the future to merit his favour by ſubmiſſion and reſpect. These inſolent terms were readily embraced by the unfortunate challenger, who fairly owned, that he was not at all calculated for the purpoſes of war, and that henceforth he would contend with no weapon but his pencil. He begged with great humility, that Mr. Pickle would not think the worſe of his morals for this defect of courage, which was a natural infirmity inherited from his father, and ſuſpend his opinion of his talents, until he ſhould have an opportunity of contemplating the charms of his Cleopatra, which would be finiſhed in leſs than three months.

Our hero obſerved with an affected air of diſpleaſure,

that no man could be justly condemned for being subject to the impressions of fear; and therefore his cowardice might easily be forgiven: but there was something so presumptuous, dishonest and disingenuous, in arrogating a quality to which he knew he had not the smallest pretension, that he could not forget his misbehaviour all at once, though he would condescend to communicate with him as formerly, in hopes of seeing a reformation in his conduct. Pallet protested, that there was no dissimulation in the case; for he was ignorant of his own weakness, until his resolution was put to the trial: he faithfully promised to demean himself, during the remaining part of the tour, with that conscious modesty and penitence which became a person in his condition; and, for the present, implored the assistance of Mr. Pipes, in disembarassing him from the disagreeable consequence of his fear.

CHAP. LXIV.

The Doctor exults in his victory. They set out for Rotterdam, *where they are entertained by two* Dutch *gentlemen in a yacht, which is overturned in the* Maeze, *to the manifest hazard of the painter's life. They spend the evening with their entertainers, and next day visit a cabinet of curiosities.*

TOM was accordingly ordered to minister to his occasions; and the conqueror, elated with his success, which he in a great measure attributed to his manner of attack, and the hymn which he howled, told Peregrine, that he was now convinced of the truth of what Pindar sung in these words, *ossa de me pephileke Zeus, atuzontai Boan Pieridon aionta*; for he had no soon-

er begun to repeat the mellifluent ſtrains of that divine poet, than the wretch his antagoniſt was confounded, and his nerves unſtrung.

On their return to the inn, he expatiated on the prudence and tranquillity of his own behaviour, and aſcribed the conſternation of Pallet to the remembrance of ſome crime that lay heavy upon his conſcience: for, in his opinion, a man of virtue and common ſenſe could not poſſibly be afraid of death, which is not only the peaceful harbour that receives him ſhattered on the tempeſtuous ſea of life, but alſo the eternal ſeal of his fame and glory, which it is no longer in his power to forfeit and forego. He lamented his fate, in being doomed to live in ſuch degenerate days, when war is become a mercenary trade; and ardently wiſhed, that the day would come, when he ſhould have ſuch an opportunity of ſignalizing his courage in the cauſe of liberty, as that of Marathon, where an handful of Athenians, fighting for their freedom, defeated the whole ſtrength of the Perſian empire. "Would to heaven! (ſaid he) my muſe were bleſſed with an occaſion to emulate that glorious teſtimony on the trophy in Cyprus, erected by Cimon, for two great victories gained on the ſame day over the Perſians by ſea and land; in which it is very remarkable, that the greatneſs of the occaſion has raiſed the manner of expreſſion above the uſual ſimplicity and modeſty of all other ancient inſcriptions." He then repeated it with all the pomp of declamation, and ſignified his hope, that the French would one day invade us with ſuch an army as that which Xerxes led into Greece, that it might be in his power to devote himſelf, like Leonidas, to the freedom of his country.

This memorable combat being thus determined, and

every thing that was remarkable in Antwerp surveyed, they sent their baggage down the Scheld to Rotterdam, and set out for the same place in a poſt waggon, which that same evening brought them in safety to the banks of the Maeze. They put up at an English house of entertainment, remarkable for the modeſty and moderation of the landlord; and next morning the doctor went in person, to deliver letters of recommendation to two Dutch gentlemen, from one of his acquaintance at Paris. Neither of them happened to be at home when he called; so that he left a message at their lodgings, with his address; and in the afternoon they waited upon the company, and after many hospitable professions, one of the two invited them to spend the evening at his house.

Mean while, they had provided a pleasure-yacht, in which they proposed to treat them with an excursion upon the Maeze. This being almoſt the only diversion that place affords, our young gentleman relished the proposal; and notwithſtanding the remonſtrances of Mr. Jolter, who declined the voyage on account of the roughness of the weather, they went on board without hesitation, and found a collation prepared in the cabin. While they tacked to and fro in the river, under the impulse of a mackerel breeze, the physician expressed his satisfaction, and Pallet was ravished with the entertainment. But the wind increasing, to the unspeakable joy of the Dutchmen, who had now an opportunity of shewing their dexterity in the management of the vessel, the gueſts found it inconvenient to ſtand upon deck, and impossible to sit below, on account of the clouds of tobacco smoke which rolled from the pipes of their entertainers, in such volumes as annoyed them even to the

hazard of suffocation. This fumigation, together with the extraordinary motion of the ship, began to affect the head and ſtomach of the painter, who begg'd earneſtly to be ſet on ſhore: but the Dutch gentlemen, who had no idea of his ſufferings, inſiſted, with ſurpriſing obſtinacy of regard, upon his ſtaying until he ſhould ſee an inſtance of the ſkill of their mariners; and bringing him on deck, commanded the men to carry the veſſel's lee-gunwale under water. This nicety of navigation they inſtantly performed, to the admiration of Pickle, the diſcompoſure of the doctor, and terror of Pallet, who bleſſed himſelf from the courteſy of a Dutchman, and prayed to heaven for his deliverance.

While the Hollanders enjoyed the reputation of this feat, and the diſtreſs of the painter at the ſame time, the yacht was overtaken by a ſudden ſquall, that overſet her in a moment, and flung every man overboard into the Maeze, before they could have the leaſt warning of their fate, much leſs, time to provide againſt the accident. Peregrine, who was an expert ſwimmer, reached the ſhore in ſafety; the phyſician, in the agonies of deſpair, laid faſt hold on the trunk-breeches of one of the men, who dragged him to the other ſide; the entertainers landed at the bomb-keys, ſmoking their pipes all the way with great deliberation; and the poor painter muſt have gone to the bottom, had not he been encountered by the cable of a ſhip, that lay at anchor near the ſcene of their diſaſter. Though his ſenſes had forſaken him, his hands faſtened by inſtinct on this providential occurrence, which he held with ſuch a convulſive graſp, that when a boat was ſent out to bring him on ſhore, it was with the utmoſt difficulty that his fingers were diſengaged. He was carried into a houſe, deprived of the

use of speech, and bereft of all sensation; and being suspended by the heels, a vaſt quantity of water ran out of his mouth. This evacuation being made, he began to utter dreadful groans, which gradually increased to a continued roar; and after he had regained the use of his senses, he underwent a delirium that laſted several hours. As for the treaters, they never dreamed of expreſſing the leaſt concern to Pickle or the physician for what had happened, because it was an accident so common, as to pass without notice.

Leaving the care of the vessel to the seamen, the company retired to their reſpective lodgings, in order to shift their cloaths; and in the evening our travellers were conducted to the house of their new friend, who, with a view of making his invitation the more agreeable, had assembled to the number of twenty or thirty Englishmen, of all ranks and degrees, from the merchant to the periwig-maker's prentice.

In the midſt of this congregation ſtood a chafing-dish with live coals, for the convenience of lighting their pipes, and every individual was accommodated with a spitting-box. There was not a mouth in the apartment unfurnished with a tube, so that they resembled a convocation of Chimeras breathing fire and smoke; and our gentlemen were fain to imitate their example in their own defence. It is not to be supposed that the conversation was either very sprightly or polite; the whole entertainment was of the Dutch caſt, frowzy and phlegmatic: and our adventurer, as he returned to his lodging, tortured with the head-ach, and disguſted with every circumſtance of his treatment, cursed the hour in which the doctor had saddled them with such troublesome companions.

Next morning by eight o'clock, these polite Hollanders returned the visit, and after breakfaſt, attended their English friends to the house of a person that poſſeſſed a very curious cabinet of curioſities, to which they had ſecured our company's admiſſion. The owner of this collection was a cheeſemonger, who received them in a woollen night-cap, with ſtraps buttoned under his chin. As he underſtood no language but his own, he told them, by the canal of one of their conductors, that he did not make a practice of ſhewing his curioſities; but underſtanding that they were Engliſhmen, and recommended to his friends, he was content to ſubmit them to their peruſal. So ſaying, he led them up a dark ſtair, into a ſmall room, decorated with a few paltry figures in plaiſter of Paris, two or three miſerable landſchapes, the ſkins of an otter, ſeal, and ſome fiſhes ſtuffed; and in one corner ſtood a glaſs-caſe, furniſhed with newts, frogs, lizzards, and ſerpents, preſerved in ſpirits; a human fœtus, a calf with two heads, and about two dozen of butterflies pinned upon paper.

The virtuoſo having exhibited theſe particulars, eyed the ſtrangers with a look ſoliciting admiration and applauſe; and as he could not perceive any ſymptom of either in their geſtures or countenances, withdrew a curtain, and diſplayed a wainſcot cheſt of drawers, in which he gave them to underſtand, was ſomething that would agreeably amuſe the imagination. Our travellers, regaled with this notice, imagined that they would be entertained with the ſight of ſome curious medals, or other productions of antiquity; but how were they diſappointed, when they ſaw nothing but a variety of ſhells, diſpoſed in whimſical figures, in each drawer! After he had detained them full two hours with a tedious comment-

ary upon the shape, size and colour of each department, he, with a supercilious simper, desired that the English gentlemen would frankly and candidly declare whether his cabinet, or that of mynheer Sloane, at London, was the moſt valuable. When this requeſt was signified in English to the company, the painter inſtantly exclaimed, "By the Lard! they are not to be named of a day. And as for that matter, I would not give one corner of Saltero's coffee-house, at Chelsea, for all the trash he hath shewn." Peregrine, unwilling to mortify any person who had done his endeavour to please him, observed, that what they had seen was very curious and entertaining; but that no private collection in Europe was equal to that of Sir Hans Sloane, which, exclusive of presents, had coſt an hundred thousand pounds. The two conductors were confounded at this asseveration, which being communicated to the cheesemonger, he shook his head with a significant grin; and tho' he did not choose to express his incredulity in words, gave our hero to underſtand, that he did not much depend upon his veracity.

From the house of this Dutch naturaliſt, they were dragged all round the city, by the painful civility of their attendants, who did not quit them till the evening was well advanced, and then not till after they had promised to be with them before ten o'clock next day, in order to conduct them to a country-house, situated in a pleasant village on the other side of the river.

Pickle was already so much fatigued with their hospitality, that, for the firſt time of his life, he suffered a dejection of spirits; and resolved, at any rate, to avoid the threatened persecution of to-morrow. With this view he ordered his servants to pack up some cloaths and linnen in a portmanteau: and in the morning embarked,

with his governor, in the Treckskuyt, for the Hague, whither he pretended to be called by some urgent occasion, leaving his fellow-travellers to make his apology to their friends; and assuring them, that he would not proceed for Amsterdam, without their society. He arrived at the Hague in the forenoon, and dined at an ordinary frequented by officers and people of fashion; where being informed, that the princess would see company in the evening, he dressed himself in a rich suit of the Parisian cut, and went to court, without any introduction. A person of his appearance could not fail to attract the notice of such a small circle. The prince himself, understanding he was an Englishman and a stranger, went up to him, without ceremony; and having welcomed him to the place, conversed with him, for some minutes, on the common topics of discourse.

CHAP. LXV.

They proceed to the Hague; *from whence they depart for* Amsterdam, *where they see a* Dutch *tragedy. Visit the music-house, in which* Peregrine *quarrels with the captain of a man of war. They pass through* Haarlem, *in their way to* Leyden. *Return to* Rotterdam, *where the company separates, and our hero, with his attendants, arrives in safety at* Harwich.

BEing joined by their fellow-travellers, in the morning, they made a tour to all the remarkable places in this celebrated village; saw the foundery, the Stadthouse, the Spinhuys, Vauxhall, and Count Bentinck's gardens, and in the evening went to the French comedy, which was directed by a noted Harlequin, who had found means to flatter the Dutch taste so effectually, that

they extolled him as the greatest actor that ever appeared in the province of Holland. This famous company did not represent regular theatrical pieces, but only a sort of impromptu's, in which this noted player always performed the greatest part of the entertainment. Among other sallies of wit that escaped him, there was one circumstance so remarkably adapted to the disposition and genius of his audience, that it were pity to pass it over in silence. A windmill being exhibited on the scene, Harlequin, after having surveyed it with curiosity and admiration, asks of one of the millers, the use of that machine; and being told, that it was a windmill, observes with some concern, that as there was not the least breath of wind, he could not have the pleasure of seeing it turn round. Urged by this consideration, he puts himself into the attitude of a person wrapt in profound meditation; and having continued a few seconds in this posture, runs to the miller with great eagerness and joy, and telling him that he had found an expedient to make his mill work, very fairly unbuttons his breeches: then presenting his posteriors to the sails of the machine, certain explosions are immediately heard, and the arms of the mill begin to turn round, to the infinite satisfaction of the spectators, who approve the joke with loud peals of applause.

Our travellers stayed a few days at the Hague, during which the young gentleman waited on the British ambassador, to whom he was recommended by his Excellency at Paris, and lost about thirty guineas at billiards to a French adventurer, who decoyed him into the snare by keeping up his game. Then they departed in a post-waggon for Amsterdam, being provided with letters of introduction to an English merchant residing in

that city, under whose auspices they visited everything worth seeing, and among other excursions went to see a Dutch tragedy acted; an entertainment which, of all others, had the strangest effect upon the organs of our hero; the dress of their chief personages was so antick, their manner so aukwardly absurd, and their language so ridiculously unfit for conveying the sentiments of love and honour, that Peregrine's nerves were diuretically affected with the complicated absurdity, and he was compelled to withdraw twenty times before the catastrophe of the piece.

The subject of this performance was the famous story of Scipio's continence and virtue, in restoring the fair captive to her lover. The young Roman hero was represented by a broad-fac'd Batavian, in a burgo-master's gown and a fur-cap, sitting smoaking his pipe at a table furnished with a can of beer, a drinking-glass, and a plate of tobacco: the lady was such a person as Scipio might very well be supposed to give away, without any great effort of generosity; and indeed the Celtiberian prince seemed to be of that opinion; for, upon receiving her from the hand of the victor, he discovered none of those transports of gratitude and joy which Livy describes, in recounting this event. The Dutch Scipio, however, was complaisant enough in his way; for he desired her to sit at his right hand, by the appellation of *Ya frow*, and with his own fingers filling a clean pipe, presented it to Mynheer Allucio the lover. The rest of the œconomy of the piece was in the same taste; which was so agreeable to the audience, that they seemed to have shaken off their natural phlegm, in order to applaud the performance.

From the play our company adjourned to the house of

their friend, where they spent the evening; and the conversation turning upon poetry, a Dutchman who was present, and understood the English language, having listened very attentively to the discourse, lifted up with both hands the greatest part of a Cheshire cheese that lay upon the table, saying, "I do know vat is boetrie. Mine brotre be a great boet, and ave vrought a book as dick as all dat." Pickle, diverted with this method of estimating an author according to the quantity of his works, inquired about the subjects of this bard's writings; but of these his brother could give no account, or other information, but that there was little market for the commodity, which hung heavy upon his hands, and induced him to wish he had applied himself to another trade.

The only remarkable scene in Amsterdam, which our company had not seen, was the Spuyl or musick-houses, which, by the connivance of the magistrates, are maintained for the recreation of those who might attempt the chastity of creditable women, if they were not provided with such conveniences. To one of these night-houses did our travellers repair, under the conduct of the English merchant, and were introduced into such another place as the ever memorable coffee-house of Moll King; with this difference, that the company here were not so riotous as the Bucks of Covent-Garden, but formed themselves into a circle, within which some of the number danced to the musick of a scurvy organ and a few other instruments, that uttered tunes very suitable to the disposition of the hearers, while the whole apartment was shrouded with clouds of smoke impervious to the view. When our gentlemen entered, the floor was occupied by two females and their gallants, who, in the performance of their exercise, lifted their legs like so

many oxen at plough; and the pipe of one of these hoppers happening to be exhausted, in the midst of his sarabrand, he very deliberately drew forth his tobacco-box, filling and lighting it again, without any interruption to the dance. Peregrine being unchecked by the presence of his governor, who was too tender of his own reputation to attend them in this expedition, made up to a sprightly French girl that sat in seeming expectation of a customer, and prevailing upon her to be his partner, led her into the circle, and, in his turn, took the opportunity of dancing a minuet, to the admiration of all present. He intended to have exhibited another specimen of his ability in this art, when a captain of a Dutch man of war chancing to come in, and seeing a stranger engaged with the lady whom, it seems, he had bespoke for his bedfellow, he advanced, without any ceremony, and seizing her by the arm, pull'd her to the other side of the room. Our adventurer, who was not a man to put up with such a brutal affront, followed the ravisher with indignation in his eyes; and pushing him on one side, retook the subject of their contest, and led her back to the place from whence she had been dragged. The Dutchman, enraged at the youth's presumption, obeyed the first dictates of his choler, and lent his rival a hearty box on the ear; which was immediately repaid with interest, before our hero could recollect himself sufficiently to lay his hand upon his sword, and beckon the aggressor to the door.

Notwithstanding the confusion and disorder which this affair produced in the room, and the endeavours of Pickle's company, who interposed, in order to prevent bloodshed, the antagonists reached the street; and Peregrine drawing, was surprised to see the captain advance

againſt him with a long knife, which he preferred to the sword that hung by his side. The youth, confounded at this prepoſterous behaviour, desired him, in the French tongue, to lay aside that vulgar implement, and approach like a gentleman: but the Hollander, who neither underſtood the proposal, nor would have complied with his demand had he been made acquainted with his meaning, rushed forward like a desperado, before his adversary could put himself on his guard; and if the young gentleman had not been endued with surprising agility, his nose would have fallen a sacrifice to the fury of the assailant. Finding himself in such imminent jeopardy, he leaped to one side, and the Dutchman passing him, in the force of his career, he with one nimble kick made such application to his enemy's heels, that he flew like lightening into the canal, where he had almoſt perished by pitching upon one of the poſts with which it was faced.

Peregrine having performed this exploit, did not ſtay for the captain's coming on shore, but retreated with all dispatch, by the advice of his conductor; and next day embarked, with his companions, in the Skuyt, for Haarlem, where they dined, and in the evening arrived at the antient city of Leyden, where they met with some English ſtudents, who treated them with great hospitality. Not but that the harmony of the conversation was that same night interrupted by a dispute that arose between one of those young gentlemen and the physician, about the cold and hot methods of prescription in the gout and rheumatism; and proceeded to such a degree of mutual reviling, that Pickle, ashamed and incensed at his fellow traveller's want of urbanity, espoused the other's cause, and openly rebuked him for his unmannerly petulance, which (he said) rendered him unfit for

the purposes, and unworthy of the benefit of society. This unexpected declaration overwhelmed the doctor with amazement and confusion; he was instantaneously deprived of his speech, and during the remaining part of the partie, sat in silent mortification. In all probability he deliberated with himself, whether or not he should expostulate with the young gentleman on the freedom he had taken with his character in a company of strangers; but as he knew he had not a Pallet to deal with, he very prudently suppressed that suggestion, and in secret chewed the cud of resentment.

After they had visited the physic garden, the university, the anatomical hall, and every other thing that was recommended to their view, they returned to Rotterdam, and held a consultation upon the method of transporting themselves to England. The doctor, whose grudge against Peregrine was rather inflamed than allayed by our hero's indifference and neglect, had tampered with the simplicity of the painter, who was proud of his advances towards a perfect reconciliation; and now took the opportunity of parting with our adventurer, by declaring that he and his friend Mr. Pallet were resolved to take their passage in a trading sloop, after he had heard Peregrine object against that tedious, disagreeable and uncertain method of conveyance. Pickle immediately saw his intention; and, without using the least argument to dissuade them from their design, or expressing the smallest degree of concern at their separation, very coolly wished them a prosperous voyage, and ordered his baggage to be sent to Helvoetsluys. There he himself, and his retinue, went on board of the pacquet next day, and, by the favour of a fair wind, in eighteen hours arrived at Harwich.

CHAP. LXVI.

Peregrine *delivers his letters of recommendation at* London, *and returns to the garison, to the unspeakable joy of the commodore and his whole family.*

NOW that our hero found himself on English ground, his heart dilated with the proud recollection of his own improvement since he left his native soil. He began to recognize the interesting ideas of his tender years; he enjoyed, by anticipation, the pleasure of seeing his friends in the garison, after an absence of eighteen months; and the image of his charming Emily, which other less worthy considerations had depressed, resumed the full possession of his breast. He remembered, with shame, that he had neglected the correspondence with her brother, which he himself had solicited, and in consequence of which he had received a letter from that young gentleman while he lived at Paris. In spite of these conscientious reflections, he was too self-sufficient to think he should find any difficulty in obtaining forgiveness for such sins of omission; and began to imagine, that his passion would be prejudicial to the dignity of his situation, if it could not be gratified upon terms which formerly his imagination durst not conceive.

Sorry am I, that the task I have undertaken, lays me under the necessity of divulging this degeneracy in the sentiments of our imperious youth, who was now in the heyday of his blood, flushed with the consciousness of his own qualifications, vain of his fortune, and elated on the wings of imaginary expectation. Tho' he was deeply enamoured of miss Gauntlet, he was far from proposing her heart as the ultimate aim of his gallantry, which (he

did not doubt) would triumph o'er the moſt illuſtrious females of the land, and at once regale his appetite and ambition.

Mean while, being willing to make his appearance at the garison equally surprising and agreeable, he cautioned Mr. Jolter againſt writing to the commodore, who had not heard of them since their departure from Paris, and hired a poſt-chaise and horses for London. The governor going out to give orders about the carriage, inadvertently left a paper book open upon the table; and his pupil caſting his eyes upon the page, chanced to read these words: "Sept. 15. Arrived in safety, by the blessing of God, in this unhappy kingdom of England. And thus concludes the journal of my laſt peregrination." Peregrine's curiosity being inflamed by this extraordinary conclusion, he turned to the beginning, and perused several sheets of a diary, such as is commonly kept by that class of people known by the denomination of travelling governors, for the satisfaction of themselves and the parents or guardians of their pupils, and for the edification and entertainment of their friends.

That the reader may have a clear idea of Mr. Jolter's performance, we shall transcribe the transactions of one day, as he had recorded them; and that abſtract will be a sufficient specimen of the whole plan and execution of the work.

"May 3. At eight o'clock set out from Boulogne in a poſt-chaise: the morning hazy and cold. Fortified my ſtomach with a cordial. Recommended ditto to Mr. P. as an antidote againſt the fog. Mem. He refused it. The hither horse greased in the off-paſtern of the hind leg. Arrive at Samers. Mem. This laſt was a poſt and a half, i. e. three leagues, or nine English miles. The day clears

up. A fine champain country, well ſtored with corn. The poſtilion says his prayers in passing by a wooden crucifix upon the road. Mem. The horses ſtaled in a small brook that runs in a bottom, betwixt two hills. Arrive at Cormont. A common poſt. A dispute with my pupil, who is obſtinate, and swayed by an unlucky prejudice. Proceed to Montreuil, where we dine on choice pigeons. A very moderate charge. No chamberpot in the room; owing to the negligence of the maid. This an ordinary poſt. Set out again for Nampont. Troubled with flatulences and indigeſtion. Mr. P. is sullen, and seems to mistake an eructation for the breaking of wind backwards. From Nampont depart for Bernay, at which place we arrive in the evening, and propose to ſtay all night. N.B. The two laſt are double poſts, and our cattle very willing though not ſtrong. Sup on a delicate ragout and excellent partridges, in company with Mr. H. and his spouse. Mem. The said H. trod upon my corn by miſtake. Discharge the bill, which is not very reasonable. Dispute with Mr. P. about giving money to the servant: he inſiſts upon my giving a twenty-four sol piece; which is too much by two thirds, in all conscience. N.B. She was a pert baggage, and did not deserve a liard."

Our hero was so much disobliged with certain circumſtances of this amusing and inſtructing journal, that, by way of punishing the author, he interlined these words betwixt two paragraphs, in a manner that exactly resembled the tutor's hand writing; "Mem. Had the pleasure of drinking myself into a sweet intoxication, by toaſting our lawful king, and his royal family, among some worthy English fathers of the society of Jesus."

Having taken this revenge, he set out for London,

where he waited upon those noblemen to whom he had letters of recommendation from Paris: and was not only graciously received, but even loaded with caresses and proffers of service, because they understood he was a young gentleman of fortune, who far from standing in need of their countenance or assistance, would make an useful and creditable addition to the number of their adherents. He had the honour of dining at their tables, in consequence of pressing invitations, and of spending several evenings with the ladies, to whom he was particularly agreeable, on account of his person, address, and bleeding freely at play.

Being thus initiated in the beau monde, he thought it was high time to pay his respects to his generous benefactor the commodore; and accordingly departed one morning, with his train, for the garison, at which he arrived in safety the same night. When he entered the gates which was opened by a new servant that did not know him, he found his old friend Hatchway stalking in the yard, with a night-cap on his head, and a pipe in his mouth; and advancing to him, took him by the hand before he had any intimation of his approach. The lieutenant, thus saluted by a stranger, stared at him in silent astonishment, till he recollected his features, which were no sooner known, than dashing the pipe upon the pavement, he exclaimed, "Smite my cross-trees! th'art welcome to port;" and hugg'd him in his arms with great affection. He then, by a cordial squeeze, expressed his satisfaction at seeing his old ship-mate Tom, who applying his whistle to his mouth, the whole castle echoed with his performance.

The servants hearing the well-known sound, poured out in a tumult of joy; and understanding that their

young master was returned, raised such a peal of acclamation, as astonished the commodore and his lady, and inspired Julia with such an interesting presage, that her heart began to throb with violence. Running out in the hurry and perturbation of her hope, she was so much overwhelmed at sight of her brother, that she actually fainted in his arms. But from this trance she soon awaked; and Peregrine having testified his pleasure and affection, went up stairs, and presented himself before his godfather and aunt. Mrs. Trunnion rose and received him with a gracious embrace, blessing God for his happy return from a land of impiety and vice, in which she hoped his morals had not been corrupted, nor his principles of religion altered or impaired. The old gentleman being confined to his chair, was struck dumb with pleasure at his appearance; and having made divers ineffectual efforts to get up, at length discharged a volley of curses against his own limbs, and held out his hand to his godson, who kiss'd it with great respect.

After he had finished his apostrophe to the gout, which was the daily and hourly subject of his execrations, "Well, my lad, (said he) I care not how soon I go to bottom, now I behold thee safe in harbour again: and yet, I tell a damn'd lie: I would I could keep afloat, until I should see a lusty boy of thy begetting. Odds my timbers! I love thee so well, that I believe thou art the spawn of my own body; though I can give no account of thy being put upon the stocks." Then turning his eye upon Pipes, who by this time had penetrated into his apartment, and addressed him with the usual salutation of "What cheer?" "Ahey! (cried he) are you there, you herring-fac'd son of a sea-calf? What a slippery trick you played your old commander! But come, you dog,

there's my fiſt; I forgive you for the love you bear to my godson. Go man your tackle, and hoiſt a cask of ſtrong beer into the yard, knock out the bung, and put a pump in it, for the use of all my servants and neighbours: and d'ye hear, let the patereroes be fired, and the garison illuminated, as rejoicings for the safe arrival of your master. By the Lord! if I had the use of these damn'd shambling shanks, I would dance a hornpipe with the beſt of you."

The next object of his attention was Mr. Jolter, who was honoured with particular marks of diſtinction, and the repeated promise of enjoying the living in his gift, as an acknowledgment of the care and discretion with which he had superintended the education and morals of our hero. The governor was so affected by the generosity of his patron, that the tears ran down his cheeks, while he expressed his gratitude, and the infinite satisfaction he felt, in contemplating the accomplishments of his pupil.

Mean while, Pipes did not neglect the orders he had received: the beer was produced, the gates were thrown open for the admission of all comers, the whole house was lighted up, and the patereroes were discharged in repeated vollies. Such phænomena could not fail to attract the notice of the neighbourhood. The club at Tunley's were aſtonished at the report of the guns, which produced various conjectures among the members of that sagacious society. The landlord observed, that in all likelihood the commodore was visited by hobgoblins, and ordered the guns to be fired in token of diſtress, as he had acted twenty years before, when he was annoyed by the same grievance. The exciseman, with a waggish sneer, expressed his apprehension of Trunnion's death, in consequence of which, the patereroes might be discharged with an equivocal intent, either as signals of his

lady's sorrow or rejoicing. The attorney signified a suspicion of Hatchway's being married to Miss Pickle, and that the firing and illuminations were in honour of the nuptials: upon which Gamaliel discovered some faint signs of emotion, and taking the pipe from his mouth, gave it as his opinion, that his sister was brought to bed.

While they were thus bewildered in the maze of their own imaginations, a company of countrymen, who sat drinking in the kitchen, and whose legs were more ready than their invention, sallied out to know the meaning of these exhibitions. Understanding that there was a butt of strong beer abroach in the yard, to which they were invited by the servants, saved themselves the trouble and expence of returning to spend the evening at the public house, and listed themselves under the banner of Tom Pipes, who presided as director of this festival.

The news of Peregrine's return being communicated to the parish, the parson and three or four neighbouring gentlemen, who were well-wishers to our hero, immediately repaired to the garison in order to pay their compliments on this happy event; and were detained to supper. An elegant entertainment was prepared by the direction of Miss July, who was an excellent housewife; and the commodore was so invigorated with joy, that he seemed to have renewed his age.

Among those who honoured the occasion with his presence was Mr. Clover, the young gentleman that made his addresses to Peregrine's sister. His heart was so big with his passion, that while the rest of the company were ingrossed by their cups, he seized an opportunity of our hero's being detached from the conversation, and in the impatience of his love, conjured him to consent to his happiness; protesting, that he would com-

ply with any terms of settlement that a man of his fortune could embrace, in favour of a young lady who was absolute mistress of his affection.

Our youth thanked him very politely for his favourable sentiments and honourable intention towards his sister, and told him, that at present he saw no reason to obstruct his desire; that he would consult Julia's own inclinations, and confer with him about the means of gratifying his wish: but in the mean time, begg'd to be excused from discussing any point of such importance to them both. Reminding him of the jovial purpose on which they were happily met, he promoted such a quick circulation of the bottle, that their mirth grew noisy and obstreperous; they broke forth into repeated peals of laughter, without any previous incitement, except that of claret. These explosions were succeeded by Bacchanalian songs, in which the old gentleman himself attempted to bear a share; the sedate governor snapped time with his fingers, and the parish-priest assisted in the chorus with a most expressive nakedness of countenance. Before midnight, they were almost all pinned to their chairs, as if they had been fixed by the power of inchantment; and what rendered the confinement still more unfortunate, every servant in the house was in the same situation; so that they were fain to take their repose as they sat, and nodded to each other like a congregation of anabaptists.

Next day, Peregrine communed with his sister on the subject of her match with Mr. Clover, who (she told him) had offered to settle a jointure of four hundred pounds, and take her to wife, without any expectation of a dowry. She, moreover, gave him to understand, that in his absence she had received several messages from

her mother, commanding her to return to her father's house; but that she had refused to obey these orders, by the advice and injunction of her aunt and the commodore, which were indeed seconded by her own inclination; because she had all the reason in the world to believe, that her mother only wanted an opportunity of treating her with severity and rancour. The resentment of that lady had been carried to such indecent lengths, that seeing her daughter at church one day, she rose up, before the parson entered, and reviled her with great bitterness, in the face of the whole congregation.

CHAP. LXVII.

Sees his sister happily married. Visits Emilia, *who receives him according to his deserts.*

HER brother being of opinion, that Mr. Clover's proposal was not to be neglected, especially as Julia's heart was engaged in his favour, communicated the affair to his uncle, who, with the approbation of Mrs. Trunnion, declared himself well satisfied with the young man's addresses, and desired that they might be buckled with all expedition, without the knowledge or concurrence of her parents, to whom (on account of their unnatural barbarity) she was not bound to pay the least regard. Though our adventurer entertained the same sentiments of the matter, and the lover dreading some obstruction, earnestly begged the immediate condescension of his mistress, she could not be prevailed upon to take such a material step, without having first solicited the permission of her father, resolved, nevertheless, to comply with the dictates of her own heart, should his objections be frivolous or unjust.

Urged by this determination, her admirer waited upon Mr. Gamaliel at the publick house, and with the appearance of great deference and respect, made him acquainted with his affection for his daughter, communicated the particulars of his fortune, with the terms of settlement he was ready to make; and in conclusion told him, that he would marry her without a portion. This last offer seemed to have some weight with the father, who received it with civility, and promised, in a day or two, to favour him with a final answer to his demand. He, accordingly, that same evening consulted his wife, who being exasperated at the prospect of her daughter's independency, argued with the most virulent expostulation against the match, as an impudent scheme of her own planning, with a view of insulting her parents, towards whom she had already been guilty of the most vicious disobedience. In short, she used such remonstrances, as not only averted this weak husband's inclination from the proposal which he had relished before, but even instigated him to apply for a warrant to apprehend his daughter, on the supposition that she was about to bestow herself in marriage without his privity or consent.

The justice of peace to whom this application was made, though he could not refuse the order, yet, being no stranger to the malevolence of the mother, which, together with Gamaliel's simplicity, was notorious in the county, he sent an intimation of what had happened to the garison; upon which, a couple of centinels were placed on the gate, and at the pressing solicitation of the lover, as well as the desire of the commodore, her brother and aunt, Julia was wedded without further delay; the ceremony being performed by Mr. Jolter, because the

parish-priest prudently declined any occasion of giving offence, and the curate was too much in the interest of their enemies to be employed in that office.

This domestic concern being settled to the satisfaction of our hero, he escorted her next day to the house of her husband, who immediately wrote a letter to her father, declaring his reasons for having thus superseded his authority; and Mrs. Pickle's mortification was unspeakable.

That the new-married couple might be guarded against all insult, our young gentleman and his friend Hatchway, with their adherents, lodged in Mr. Clover's house for some weeks; during which they visited their acquaintance in the neighbourhood, according to custom. When the tranquillity of their family was perfectly established, and the contract of marriage executed in the presence of the old commodore and his lady, who gave her niece five hundred pounds to purchase jewels and cloaths, Mr. Peregrine could no longer restrain his impatience to see his dear Emily; and told his uncle, that next day he proposed to ride across the country, in order to visit his friend Gauntlet, from whom he had not heard of a long time.

The old gentleman, looking steadfastly in his face, "Ah! damn your cunning! (said he) I find the anchor holds fast: I did suppose as how you would have slipt your cable, and changed your birth; but, I see, when a young fellow is once brought up by a pretty wench, he may man his capstans and viol-block, if he wool; but he'll as soon heave up the Pike of Teneriff, as bring his anchor aweigh! Odds heartlikins! had I known the young woman was Ned Gauntlet's daughter, I shouldn't have thrown out signal for leaving off chace."

Our adventurer was not a little surprized to hear the commodore talk in this ſtile; and immediately conjectured, that his friend Godfrey had informed him of the whole affair. Inſtead of liſtening to this approbation of his flame, with those transports of joy which he would have felt, had he retained his former ſentiments, he was chagrined at Trunnion's declaration, and offended at the preſumption of the young ſoldier, in pretending to diſcloſe the ſecret with which he had intruſted him. Reddening with these reflections, he aſſured the commodore, that he never had ſerious thoughts of matrimony: ſo that if any perſon had told him he was under any engagement of that kind, he had abuſed his ear; for he proteſted, that he would never contract ſuch attachments, without his knowledge and expreſs permiſſion.

Trunnion commended him for his prudent reſolution, and obſerved, that though no perſon mentioned to him what promiſes had paſſed betwixt him and his ſweetheart, it was very plain that he had made love to her; and therefore, it was to be ſuppoſed, that his intentions were honourable: for, he could not believe he was ſuch a rogue in his heart, as to endeavour to debauch the daughter of a brave officer, who had ſerved his country with credit and reputation. Notwithſtanding this remonſtrance, which Pickle imputed to the commodore's ignorance of the world, he ſet out for the habitation of Mrs. Gauntlet, with the unjuſtifiable ſentiments of a man of pleaſure, who ſacrifices every conſideration to the deſire of his ruling appetite; and as Wincheſter lay in his way, reſolved to viſit ſome of his friends who lived in that place. It was in the houſe of one of these, that he was informed of Emilia's being then in town with her mother; upon which, he excuſed himſelf from ſtaying

to drink tea, and immediately repaired to their lodgings, according to the direction he had received.

When he arrived at the door, instead of undergoing that perturbation of spirits, which a lover, in his interesting situation, might be supposed to feel, he suffered no emotion but that of vanity and pride, favoured with an opportunity of self-gratification, and entered his Emilia's apartment with the air of a conceited petit maitre, rather than that of the respectful admirer, when he visits the object of his passion, after an absence of seventeen months.

The young lady having been very much disobliged at his mortifying neglect of her brother's letter, had summoned all her own pride and resolution to her aid; and by means of a happy disposition so far overcame her chagrin at his indifference, that she was able to behave in his presence with apparent tranquillity and ease. She was even pleased to find, he had by accident chosen a time for his visit, when she was surrounded by two or three young gentlemen, who professed themselves her admirers. Our gallant was no sooner announced, than she collected all her coquetry, put on the gayest air she could assume, and contrived to giggle just as he appeared at the room-door. The compliments of salutation being performed, she welcomed him to England in a careless manner, asked the news of Paris, and, before he could make any reply, desired one of the other gentlemen to proceed with the sequel of that comical adventure, in the relation of which he had been interrupted.

Peregrine smiled within himself at this behaviour, which (without all doubt) he believed she had affected to punish him for his unkind silence, while he was abroad; being fully persuaded, that her heart was abso-

lutely at his devotion. On this supposition, he practised his Parisian improvements on the art of conversation, and uttered a thousand prettinesses in the way of compliment, with such incredible rotation of tongue, that his rivals were struck dumb with astonishment; and Emilia fretted out of all temper, at seeing herself deprived of the prerogative of the sex. He persisted, however, in this surprising loquacity, until the rest of the company thought proper to withdraw, and then contracted his discourse into the focus of love, which now put on a very different appearance from that which it had formerly worn. Instead of that awful veneration which her presence used to inspire, that chastity of sentiment and delicacy of expression, he now gazed upon her with the eyes of a libertine, he glowed with the impatience of desire, talked in a strain that barely kept within the bounds of decency, and attempted to snatch such favours as she, in the tenderness of mutual acknowledgement, had once vouchsafed to bestow.

Grieved and offended as she was, at this palpable alteration in his carriage, she disdained to remind him of his former deportment, and with dissembled good humour, rallied him on the progress he had made in gallantry and address: but far from submitting to the liberties he would have taken, she kept her person sacred from his touch, and would not even suffer him to ravish a kiss of her fair hand: so that he reaped no other advantage from the exercise of his talents, during this interview, which lasted a whole hour, than that of knowing he had over-rated his own importance; and that Emily's heart was not a garison likely to surrender at discretion.

At length his addresses were interrupted by the arrival of the mother, who had gone abroad to visit by her-

self; and the conversation becoming more general, he understood, that Godfrey was at London, soliciting for a lieutenancy that had fallen vacant in the regiment to which he belonged; and that Miss Sophy was at home with her father.

Though our adventurer had not met with all the success he expected by his first visit, he did not despair of reducing the fortress, believing that in time there would be a mutiny in his favour; and accordingly, carried on the siege for several days, without profiting by his perseverance; till at length, having attended the ladies to their own house in the country, he began to look upon this adventure as time mispent, and resolved to discontinue his attack, in hopes of meeting with a more favourable occasion; being, in the mean time, ambitious of displaying, in an higher sphere, those qualifications which his vanity told him, were at present misapplied.

CHAP. LXVIII.

He attends his uncle with great affection, during a fit of illness. Sets out again for London; *meets with his friend* Godfrey, *who is prevailed upon to accompany him to* Bath; *on the road to which place they chance to dine with a person, who entertains them with a curious account of a certain company of adventurers.*

THUS determined, he took leave of Emilia and her mother, on pretence of going to London upon some urgent business, and returned to the garison, leaving the good old lady very much concerned, and the daughter incensed at his behaviour, which was the more unexpected, because Godfrey had told them, that the commodore approved of his nephew's passion.

Our adventurer found his uncle so ill of the gout, which, for the first time, had taken possession of his stomach, that his life was in imminent danger, and the whole family in disorder: he therefore took the reins of government in his own hands, sent for all the physicians in the neighbourhood, and attended him in person with the most affectionate care, during the whole fit, which lasted a fortnight, and then retired before the strength of his constitution.

When the old gentleman recovered his health, he was so penetrated with Peregrine's behaviour, that he actually would have made over to him his whole fortune, and depended upon him for his own subsistance, had not our youth opposed the execution of the deed with all his influence and might, and even persuaded him to make a will, in which his friend Hatchway, and all his other adherents, were liberally remembered, and his aunt provided for, on her own terms. This material point being settled, he, with his uncle's permission, departed for London, after having seen the family-affairs established under the direction and administration of Mr. Jolter and the lieutenant: for, by this time, Mrs. Trunnion was wholly occupied with her spiritual concerns.

On his first arrival at London, he sent a card to the lodgings of Gauntlet, in consequence of a direction from his mother; and that young gentleman waited on him next morning, though not with that alacrity of countenance and warmth of friendship, which might have been expected from the intimacy of their former connexion. Nor was Peregrine himself actuated by the same unreserved affection for the soldier, which he had formerly entertained. Godfrey, over and above the offence he had taken at Pickle's omission in point of cor-

responding with him, had been informed, by a letter from his mother, of the youth's cavalier behaviour to Emilia, during his last residence at Winchester; and our young gentleman (as we have already observed) was disgusted at the supposed discovery which the soldier had made, in his absence, to the commodore. They perceived their mutual umbrage at meeting, and received each other with that civility of reserve, which commonly happens between two persons, when their friendship is in the wane.

Gauntlet at once divined the cause of the other's displeasure; and in order to vindicate his own character, after the first compliments were passed, took the opportunity of inquiring after the health of the commodore, to tell Peregrine that while he tarried at the garison, in his return from Dover, the subject of the conversation, one night, happening to turn on our hero's passion, the old gentleman had expressed his concern about that affair; and, among other observations, said, he supposed the object of his love was some paultry hussy, whom he had picked up when he was a boy at school. Upon which, Mr. Hatchway assured him, that she was a young woman of as good a family as any in the country; and after having prepossessed him in her favour, ventured (out of the zeal of his friendship) to tell who she was: wherefore the discovery was not to be imputed to any other cause: and he hoped Mr. Pickle would acquit him of all share in the transaction.

Peregrine was very well pleased to be thus undeceived; his countenance immediately cleared up, the formality of his behaviour relaxed into his usual familiarity; he asked pardon for his unmannerly neglect of Godfrey's letter, which, he protested, was not owing to any disregard, or abatement of friendship, but to a hurry of

youthful engagements, in consequence of which, he had procraſtinated his answer from time to time, until he was ready to return in person.

The young soldier was contented with this apology; and as Pickle's intention, with reſpect to his ſiſter, was ſtill dubious and undeclared, he did not think it was incumbent upon him, as yet, to express any resentment on that score; but was wise enough to foresee, that the renewal of his intimacy with our young gentleman, might be the means of reviving that flame which had been dissipated by a variety of new ideas. With those sentiments he laid aside all reserve, and their communication immediately resumed its former channel. Peregrine made him acquainted with all the adventures in which he had been engaged since their parting; and he, with the same confidence, related the remarkable incidents of his own fate; among other things, giving him to underſtand, that upon obtaining a commission in the army, the father of his dear Sophy, without once inquiring about the occasion of his promotion, had not only favoured him with his countenance in a much greater degree than heretofore, but also contributed his intereſt and even promised the aſſiſtance of his purse, in procuring for him a lieutenancy, which he was then soliciting with all his power; whereas, if he had not been enabled, by a moſt accidental piece of good fortune, to lift himself into the sphere of an officer, he had all the reason in the world to believe, that this gentleman, and all the reſt of his wealthy relations, would have suffered him to languish in obscurity and diſtress; and, by turning his misfortune into reproach, made it a plea for their own want of generosity and friendship.

Peregrine underſtanding the situation of his friend's

affairs, would have accommodated him upon the inſtant, with a sum to accelerate the passage of his commission through the offices; but, being too well acquainted with his scrupulous disposition to manifeſt his benevolence in that manner, he found means to introduce himself to one of the gentlemen of the war office, who was so well satisfied with the arguments he used in behalf of his friend, that Godfrey's business was transacted in a very few days, though he himself knew nothing of his intereſt's being thus reinforced.

By this time, the season at Bath was begun; and our hero, panting with the desire of diſtinguishing himself at that resort of the fashionable world, communicated his design of going thither to his friend Godfrey, whom he importuned to accompany him in the excursion: and leave of absence from his regiment being obtained, by the influence of Peregrine's new quality-friends, the two companions departed from London in a poſt-chaise, attended, as usual, by the valet de chambre and Pipes, who were become almoſt as necessary to our adventurer as any two of his own organs.

At the inn, when they alighted for dinner, Godfrey perceived a person walking by himself in the yard, with a very pensive air, and upon observing him more narrowly, recognized him to be a professed gameſter, whom he had formerly known at Tunbridge. On the ſtrength of this acquaintance, he accoſted the peripatetic, who knew him immediately; and, in the fulness of his grief and vexation, told him, that he was now on his return from Bath, where he had been ſtripp'd by a company of sharpers, who resented that he should presume to trade upon his own bottom.

Peregrine, who was extremely curious in his inquir-

ies, imagining that he might learn some entertaining and useful anecdotes from this artiſt, invited him to dinner, and was accordingly fully informed of all the political ſyſtems at the Bath. He underſtood, that there was at London one great company of adventurers, who employed agents in all the different branches of impoſition, throughout the whole kingdom of England, allowing these miniſters a certain proportion of the profits accruing from their induſtry and skill, and reſerving the greateſt share for the benefit of the common ſtock, which was chargeable with the expence of fitting out individuals in their various purſuits, as well as with the loss ſuſtained in the course of their adventures. Some, whose persons and qualifications are by the company judged adequate to the task, exert their talents in making love to ladies of fortune, being accommodated with money and accoutrements for that purpose, after having given their bonds payable to one or other of the directors, on the day of marriage, for certain sums, proportioned to the dowries they are to receive. Others, verſed in the doctrine of chances, and certain secret expedients, frequent all those places where games of hazard are allowed; and such as are maſters in the arts of billiards, tennis and bowls, are continually lying in wait, in all the scenes of these diverſions, for the ignorant and unwary. A fourth class attend horse-races, being skilled in those myſterious practices, by which the knowing-ones are taken in. Nor is this community unfurniſhed with those who lay wanton wives and old rich widows under contribution, and extort money, by proſtituting themselves to the embraces of their own sex, and then threatening their admirers with proſecution. But their moſt important returns are made by that body of their undertakers

who exercise their understandings in the innumerable stratagems of the card-table, at which no sharper can be too infamous to be received, and even caressed by persons of the highest rank and distinction. Among other articles of intelligence, our young gentleman learn'd, that those agents, by whom their guest was broke, and expelled from Bath, had constituted a bank against all sporters, and monopolized the advantage in all sorts of play. He then told Gauntlet, that if he would put himself under his direction, he would return with them, and lay such a scheme, as would infallibly ruin the whole society at billiards, as he knew that Godfrey excelled them all in his knowledge of that game.

The soldier excused himself from engaging in any party of that kind; and after dinner the travellers parted; but, as the conversation between the two friends turned upon the information they had received, Peregrine projected a plan for punishing those villanous pests of society, who prey upon their fellow-creatures; and it was put in execution by Gauntlet, in this manner.

CHAP. LXIX.

Godfrey *executes a scheme at* Bath, *by which a whole company of sharpers is ruined.*

ON the evening after their arrival at Bath, Godfrey, who had kept himself up all day for that purpose, went in boots to the billiard-table; and two gentlemen being at play, began to bet with so little appearance of judgment, that one of the adventurers then present was inflamed with the desire of profiting by his inexperience; and when the table was vacant, invited him to take a game for amusement. The soldier, assuming the air of a

self-conceited dupe, answered, that he did not choose to throw away his time for nothing, but, if he pleased, would piddle for a crown a game. This declaration was very agreeable to the other, who wanted to be further confirmed in the opinion he had conceived of the ſtranger, before he would play for anything of consequence. The partie being accepted, Gauntlet put off his coat, and beginning with seeming eagerness, won the firſt game, because his antagoniſt kept up his play with a view of encouraging him to wager a greater sum. The soldier purposely bit at the hook, the ſtakes were doubled, and he was again victorious, by the permission of his competitor. He now began to yawn; and observing, that it was not worth his while to proceed in such a childish manner, the other swore, in an affected passion, that he would play with him for twenty guineas. The proposal being embraced (thro' the connivance of Godfrey) the money was won by the sharper, who exerted his dexterity to the uttermoſt, fearing that otherwise his adversary would decline continuing the game.

Godfrey thus conquered, pretended to lose his temper, cursed his own ill-luck, swore that the table had a caſt, and that the balls did not run true, changed his maſt, and, with great warmth, challenged his enemy to double the sum. The gameſter, with feigned reluctance, complied with his desire; and having got the firſt two hazards, offered to lay one hundred guineas to fifty on the game. The odds were taken; and Godfrey having allowed himself to be overcome, began to rage with great violence, broke the maſt to pieces, threw the balls out at the window, and, in the fury of his indignation, defied his antagoniſt to meet him to-morrow, when he should be refreshed from the fatigue of travelling. This

was a very welcome invitation to the gamester, who imagining that the soldier would turn out a most beneficial prize, assured him, that he would not fail to be there next forenoon, in order to give him his revenge.

Gauntlet went home to his lodgings, fully certified of his own superiority; and took his measures with Peregrine, touching the prosecution of their scheme; while his opponent made a report of his success to the brethren of the gang, who resolved to be present at the decision of the match, with the view of taking advantage of the stranger's passionate disposition.

Affairs being thus concerted on both sides, the players met, according to appointment, and the room was immediately filled with spectators, who either came thither by accident, curiosity, or design. The match was fixed for one hundred pounds a game, the principals chose their instruments, and laid aside their coats, and one of the knights of the order proffered to lay another hundred on the head of his associate. Godfrey took him upon the instant. A second worthy of the same class, seeing him so eager, challenged him to treble the sum; and his proposal met with the same reception, to the astonishment of the company, whose expectation was raised to a very interesting pitch. The game was begun, and the soldier having lost the first hazard, the odds were offered by the confederacy, with great vociferation; but no body would run such a risk, in favour of a person who was utterly unknown. The sharper having gained the second also, the noise increased to a surprising clamour, not only of the gang, but likewise of almost all the spectators, who desired to lay two to one against the brother of Emilia.

Peregrine, who was present, perceiving the cupidity

of the association sufficiently inflamed, all of a sudden opened his mouth, and answered their betts, to the amount of twelve hundred pounds; which were immediately deposited, on both sides, in money and notes: so that this was (perhaps) the most important game that ever was play'd at billiards. Gauntlet seeing the agreement settled, struck his antagonist's ball into the pocket, in a twinkling, tho' it was in one of those situations which are supposed to be against the striker. The betters were a little discomposed at this event, for which, however, they consoled themselves, by imputing the success to accident; but when, at the very next stroke, he sprung it over the table, their countenances underwent an instantaneous distraction of feature, and they waited, in the most dreadful suspence, for the next hazard, which being likewise taken, with infinite ease, by the soldier, the blood forsook their cheeks, and the interjection *Zounds!* pronounced with a look of consternation, and in a tone of despair, proceeded from every mouth, at the same instant of time. They were overwhelmed with horror and astonishment at seeing three hazards taken in as many strokes, from a person of their friend's dexterity; and shrewdly suspected, that the whole was a scheme preconcerted for their destruction: on this supposition, they changed the note, and attempted to hedge for their own indemnification, by proposing to lay the odds in favour of Gauntlet; but so much was the opinion of the company altered by that young gentleman's success, that no body would venture to espouse the cause of his competitor, who chancing to improve his game by the addition of another lucky hit, diminished the concern, and revived the hopes of his adherents. But this gleam of fortune did not long continue: Godfrey collected his

whole art and capacity, and augmenting his score to number ten, indulged himself with a view of the whole fraternity. The visages of these professors had adopted different shades of complexion, at every hazard he had taken; from their natural colour they had shifted into a sallow hue; from thence into pale; from pale into yellow, which degenerated into a mahogony tint; and now they saw seventeen hundred pounds of their ſtock depending upon a single ſtroke, they ſtood like so many swarthy Moors, jaundiced with terror and vexation. The fire which naturally glowed in the cheeks and nose of the player, seemed utterly extinct, and his carbuncles exhibited a livid appearance, as if a gangrene had already made some progress in his face; his hand began to shake, and his whole frame was seized with such trepidation, that he was fain to swallow a bumper of brandy, in order to re-eſtablish the tranquillity of his nerves. This expedient, however, did not produce the desired effect; for he aimed the ball at the lead with such discomposure, that it ſtruck on the wrong side, and came off at an angle which directed it full in the middle hole. This fatal accident was attended with an universal groan, as if the whole universe had gone to wreck: and notwithſtanding that tranquillity for which adventurers are so remarkable, this loss made such an impression upon them all, that each in particular manifeſted his chagrin, by the moſt violent emotions. One turned up his eyes to heaven, and bit his nether lip; another gnawed his fingers, while he ſtalked across the room; a third blasphemed with horrible imprecations; and he who played the party, sneaked off, grinding his teeth together, with a look that baffles all description, and as he crossed the threshold, exclaiming, "A damn'd bite, by G–d!"

The victors, after having insulted them, by asking if they were disposed for another chance, carried off their winning, with the appearance of great composure, though in their hearts they were transported with unspeakable joy; not so much on account of the booty they had gained, as in consideration of having so effectually destroyed such a nest of pernicious miscreants.

Peregrine believing, that now he had found an opportunity of serving his friend, without giving offence to the delicacy of his honour, told him, upon their arrival at their lodgings, that fortune had at length enabled him to become in a manner independent, or at least to make himself easy in his circumstances, by purchasing a company with the money he had won. So saying, he put his share of the success in Gauntlet's hand, as a sum that of right belonged to him, and promised to write in his behalf to a nobleman, who had interest enough to promote such a quick rise in the service.

Godfrey thanked him for his obliging intention, but absolutely refused, with great loftiness of demeanour, to appropriate to his own use any part of the money which Pickle had gained, and seemed affronted at the other's entertaining a sentiment so unworthy of his character. He would not even accept, in the way of loan, such an addition to his own stock, as would amount to the price of a company of foot; but expressed great confidence in the future exertion of that talent which had been blessed with such a prosperous beginning. Our hero finding him thus obstinately deaf to the voice of his own interest, resolved to govern himself in his next endeavours of friendship, by his experience of this ticklish punctilio; and, in the mean time, gave a handsome benefaction to the hospital, out of these first-fruits of the success in

play, and reserved two hundred pounds for a set of diamond ear-rings and solitaire, which he intended for a present to Miss Emily.

CHAP. LXX.

The two friends eclipse all their competitors in gallantry, and practise a pleasant project of revenge upon the physicians of the place.

THE fame of their exploit against the sharpers, was immediately diffused through all companies at the Bath; so that when our adventurers appeared in public, they were pointed out by an hundred extended fingers, and considered as consummate artists in all the different species of finesse, which they would not fail to practise with the first opportunity. Nor was this opinion of their characters any obstacle to their reception into the fashionable parties in the place; but, on the contrary, such a recommendation, which (as I have already hinted) never fails to operate for the advantage of the possessor.

This first adventure, therefore, served them as an introduction to the company at Bath, who were not a little surprized to find their expectations baffled by the conduct of the two companions; because, far from engaging deeply at play, they rather shunned all occasions of gaming, and directed their attention to gallantry, in which our hero shone unrivalled. His external qualifications, exclusive of any other merit, were strong enough to captivate the common run of the female sex; and these, reinforced with a sprightliness of conversation, and a most insinuating address, became irresistible, even by those who were fortified with pride, caution or indifference. But, among all the nymphs of this gay place, he did not

meet with one object that disputed the empire of his heart with Emilia; and therefore he divided his attachment according to the suggestions of vanity and whim; so that, before he had resided a fortnight at the Bath, he had set all the ladies by the ears, and furnished all the hundred tongues of scandal with full employment. The splendor of his appearance excited the inquiries of envy, which, instead of discovering any circumstance to his prejudice, was cursed with the information of his being a young gentleman of a good family, and heir to an immense fortune.

The countenance of some of his quality-friends, who arrived at Bath, confirmed this piece of intelligence: upon which, his acquaintance was courted and cultivated with great assiduity; and he met with such advances from some of the fair sex, as rendered him extremely fortunate in his amours. Nor was his friend Godfrey a stranger to favours of the same kind; his accomplishments were exactly calculated for the meridian of female taste; and with certain individuals of that sex, his muscular frame, and the robust connexion of his limbs, were more attractive than the delicate proportions of his companion. He accordingly reigned paramount among those inamorata's who were turned of thirty, without being under the necessity of proceeding by tedious addresses; and was thought to have co-operated with the waters, in removing the sterility of certain ladies, who had long undergone the reproach and disgust of their husbands: while Peregrine set up his throne among those who laboured under the disease of celibacy, from the pert miss of fifteen, who, with a fluttering heart, tosses her head, bridles up, and giggles involuntarily at sight of an handsome young man, to the

ſtaid maiden of twenty-eight, who, with a demure aſpect, moralizes on the vanity of beauty, the folly of youth, and ſimplicity of woman, and expatiates on friendſhip, benevolence, and good ſenſe, in the ſtile of a platonic philoſopher.

In ſuch a diverſity of diſpoſitions, his conqueſts were attended with all the heart-burnings, animoſities and turmoils of jealouſy and ſpite. The younger claſs took all opportunities of mortifying their ſeniors in public, by treating them with that indignity which (contrary to the general privilege of age) is by the conſent and connivance of mankind, levelled againſt thoſe who have the misfortune to come under the denomination of old maids; and theſe laſt retorted their hoſtilities in the private machinations of ſlander, ſupported by experience and ſubtility of invention. Not one day paſſed, in which ſome new ſtory did not circulate, to the prejudice of one or other of thoſe rivals.

If our hero, in the long-room, chanced to quit one of the moraliſts, with whom he had been engaged in converſation, he was immediately accoſted by a number of the oppoſite faction, who, with ironical ſmiles, upbraided him with cruelty to the poor lady he had left, exhorted him to have compaſſion on her ſufferings; and turning their eyes towards the object of their interceſſion, broke forth into an univerſal peal of laughter. On the other hand, when Peregrine, in conſequence of having danced with one of the minors over-night, viſited her in the morning, the Platoniſts immediately laid hold on the occaſion, taſked their imaginations, aſſociated ideas, and with ſage inſinuations retailed a thouſand circumſtances of the interview, which never had any foundation in truth. They obſerved, that if girls are deter

mined to behave with such indiscretion, they must lay their accounts with incurring the censure of the world; that she in question, was old enough to act more circumspectly; and wondered that her mother would permit any young fellow to approach the chamber, while her daughter was naked in bed. As for the servants peeping through the key hole, to be sure it was an unlucky accident; but people ought to be upon their guard against such curiosity, and give their domestics no cause to employ their penetration. These, and other such reflections, were occasionally whispered as secrets among those who were known to be communicative; so that, in a few hours, it became the general topic of discourse; and as it had been divulged under injunctions of secrecy, it was almost impossible to trace the scandal to its origin; because every person concerned, must have promulgated her own breach of trust, in discovering her author of the report.

Peregrine, instead of allaying, rather exasperated this contention, by an artful distribution of his attention among the competitors; well knowing, that should his regard be converged into one point, he would soon forfeit the pleasure he enjoyed, in seeing them at variance; for both parties would join against the common enemy, and his favourite would be persecuted by the whole coalition. He perceived, that among the secret agents of scandal, none were so busy as the physicians, a class of animals who live in this place, like so many ravens hovering about a carcase, and even ply for employment, like scullers at Hungerford stairs. The greatest part of them have correspondents in London, who make it their business to enquire into the history, character, and distemper of every one that repairs to Bath, for the benefit

of the waters; and if they cannot procure intereſt to recommend their medical friends to these patients, before they set out, they at leaſt furnish them with a previous account of what they could collect, that their correspondents may use this intelligence for their own advantage. By these means, and the assiſtance of flattery and assurance, they often insinuate themselves into the acquaintance of ſtrangers, and by consulting their dispositions, become necessary and subservient to their prevailing passions. By their connexion with apothecaries and nurses, they are informed of all the private occurrences in each family; and therefore enabled to gratify the rancour of malice, amuse the spleen of peevish indisposition, and entertain the eagerness of impertinent curiosity.

In the course of these occupations, which frequently affected the reputation of our two adventurers, this whole body fell under the displeasure of our hero, who, after divers consultations with his friend, concerted a ſtratagem, which was practised upon the faculty in this manner. Among those who frequented the pump-room, was an old officer, whose temper, naturally impatient, was, by repeated attacks of the gout, which had almoſt deprived him of the use of his limbs, sublimated into a remarkable degree of virulence and perverseness: he imputed the inveteracy of his diſtemper to the male practice of a surgeon who had administered to him, while he laboured under the consequences of an unfortunate amour; and this supposition had inspired him with an insurmountable antipathy to all the professors of the medical art, which was more and more confirmed by the information of a friend at London, who had told him, that it was a common practice among the physicians at

Bath, to dissuade their patients from drinking the water, that the cure, and of consequence their attendance, might be the longer protracted.

Thus prepossessed, he had come to Bath, and, conformable to a few general instructions he had received, used the waters without any farther direction, taking all occasions of manifesting his hatred and contempt of the sons of Æsculapius, both by speech and gesticulations, and even by pursuing a regimen quite contrary to that which he knew they prescribed to others, who seemed to be exactly in his condition. But he did not find his account in this method, how successful soever it may have been in other cases. His complaints, instead of vanishing, were every day more and more enraged; and at length he was confined to his bed, where he lay blaspheming from morn to night, and from night to morn, though still more determined than ever to adhere to his former maxims.

In the midst of his torture, which was become the common joke of the town, being circulated through the industry of the physicians, who triumphed in his disaster; Peregrine, by means of Mr. Pipes, employed a country-fellow, who had come to market, to run with great haste, early one morning, to the lodgings of all the doctors in town, and desire them to attend the colonel with all imaginable dispatch. In consequence of this summons, the whole faculty put themselves in motion; and three of the foremost arriving at the same instant of time, far from complimenting one another with the door, each separately essayed to enter, and the whole triumvirate stuck in the passage. While they remained thus wedged together, they descried two of their brethren posting towards the same goal, with all the speed that

God had enabled them to exert; upon which they came to a parley, and agreed to ſtand by one another. This covenant being made, they diſentangled themſelves, and inquiring about the patient, were told by the ſervant, that he had juſt fallen aſleep.

Having received this intelligence, they took poſſeſſion of his anti-chamber, and ſhut the door, while the reſt of the tribe poſted themſelves on the outſide, as they arrived; ſo that the whole paſſage was filled, from the top of the ſtair-caſe to the ſtreet-door; and the people of the houſe, together with the colonel's ſervant, ſtruck dumb with aſtoniſhment. The three leaders of this learned gang had no ſooner made their lodgment good, than they began to conſult about the patient's malady, which every one of them pretended to have conſidered with great care and aſſiduity. The firſt who gave his opinion, ſaid, the diſtemper was an obſtinate Arthritis; the ſecond affirmed, that it was no other than a confirmed pox; and the third ſwore it was an inveterate ſcurvy. This diverſity of opinions was ſupported by a variety of quotations from medical authors, ancient as well as modern: but theſe were not of ſufficient authority, or at leaſt not explicit enough to decide the diſpute; for there are many ſchiſms in medicine, as well as in religion, and each ſect can quote the fathers in ſupport of the tenets they profeſs. In ſhort, the contention roſe to ſuch a pitch of clamour, as not only alarmed their brethren on the ſtair, but alſo waked the patient from the firſt nap he had enjoyed in the ſpace of ten whole days. Had it been ſimply waking, he would have been obliged to them for the noiſe that diſturbed him; for, in that caſe he would have been relieved from the tortures of hell-fire, to which, in his dream, he fancied himſelf expoſed: but

this dreadful vision had been the result of that impression which was made upon his brain, by the intolerable anguish of his joints; so that, when he waked, the pain, instead of being allayed, was rather aggravated by a greater acuteness of sensation; and the confused vociferation in the next room, invading his ears at the same time, he began to think his dream was realized; and, in the pangs of despair, applied himself to a bell that stood by his bed-side, which he rung with great violence and perseverance.

This alarm put an immediate stop to the disputation of the three doctors, who, upon this notice of his being awake, rushed into his chamber without ceremony; and two of them seizing his arms, the third made the like application to one of his temples. Before the patient could recollect himself from the amazement which had laid hold on him, at this unexpected irruption, the room was filled by the rest of the faculty, who followed the servant that entered, in obedience to his master's call; and the bed was, in a moment, surrounded by these gaunt ministers of death. The colonel seeing himself beset with such an assemblage of solemn visages and figures, which he had always considered with the utmost detestation and abhorrence, was incensed to a most inexpressible degree of indignation; and so inspirited by his rage, that though his tongue denied its office, his other limbs performed their function; he disengaged himself from the triumvirate, who had taken possession of his body, sprung out of bed with incredible agility, and seizing one of his crutches, applied it so effectually to one of the three, just as he stooped to examine the patient's water, that his tye-periwig dropped into the pot, while he himself fell motionless on the floor.

This significant explanation disconcerted the whole fraternity; every man turned his face, as if it were by inſtinct, towards the door; and the retreat of the community being obſtructed by the efforts of individuals, confuſion and tumultuous uproar enſued: for the colonel, far from limiting his proweſs to the firſt exploit, handled his weapon with aſtoniſhing vigour and dexterity, without reſpect of perſons; ſo that few or none of them had eſcaped without marks of his diſpleaſure, when his ſpirits failed, and he ſunk down again, quite exhauſted, on his bed. Favoured by this reſpite, the diſcomfited faculty collected their hats and wigs, which had fallen off in the fray; and perceiving the aſſailant too much enfeebled to renew the attack, ſet up their throats together, and loudly threatened to proſecute him ſeverely for ſuch an outrageous aſſault.

By this time, the landlord had interpoſed; and inquiring into the cauſe of the diſturbance, was informed of what had happened by the complainants, who, at the ſame time, giving him to underſtand, that they had been ſeverally ſummoned to attend the colonel that morning, he aſſured them, that they had been impoſed upon by ſome wag; for his lodger had never dream'd of conſulting any one of their profeſſion.

Thunderſtruck at his declaration, the general clamour inſtantaneouſly ceaſed; and each, in particular, at once comprehending the nature of the joke, they ſneaked ſilently off with the loſs they had ſuſtained, in unutterable ſhame and mortification; while Peregrine and his friend, who took care to be paſſing that way by accident, made a full ſtop at ſight of ſuch an extraordinary efflux, and enjoyed the countenance and condition of every one as he appeared: nay, even made up to ſome

of those who seemed most affected with their situation, and mischievously tormented them with questions touching this unusual congregation; then, in consequence of the information they received from the landlord and the colonel's valet, subjected the sufferers to the ridicule of all the company in town. As it would have been impossible for the authors of this farce to keep themselves concealed from the indefatigable inquiries of the physicians, they made no secret of their having directed the whole; though they took care to own it in such an ambiguous manner, as afforded no handle of prosecution.

CHAP. LXXI.

Peregrine *humbles a noted Hector, and meets with a strange character at the house of a certain lady.*

AMONG those who never failed to reside at Bath, during the season, was a certain person, who, from the most abject misery, had by his industry and art at play, amassed about fifteen thousand pounds; and though his character was notorious, insinuated himself so far into the favour of what is called the best company, that very few private parties of pleasure took place, in which he was not principally concerned. He was of a gigantic stature, a most intrepid countenance; and his disposition, naturally over-bearing, had in the course of his adventures and success, acquired a most intolerable degree of insolence and vanity. By the ferocity of his features, and audacity of his behaviour, he had obtained a reputation for the most undaunted courage, which had been confirmed by divers adventures, in which he had humbled the most assuming heroes of his

own fraternity: so that he now reigned chief Hector of the place, with unquestioned authority.

With this son of fortune was Peregrine one evening engaged at play, and so successful, that he could not help informing his friend of his good luck. Godfrey hearing the description of the loser, immediately recognized the person, whom he had known at Tunbridge; and assuring Pickle, that he was a sharper of the first water, cautioned him against any future connexion with such a dangerous companion, who (he affirmed) had suffered him to win a small sum, that he might be encouraged to lose a much greater, upon some other occasion.

Our young gentleman treasured up this advice; and though he did not scruple to give the gamester an opportunity of retrieving his loss, when he next day demanded his revenge, he absolutely refused to proceed, after he had refunded his winning. The other, who considered him as a hot-headed unthinking youth, endeavoured to enflame his pride to a continuance of the game, by treating his skill with scorn and contempt; and, among other sarcastic expressions, advising him to go to school again, before he pretended to engage with masters of the art. Our hero, incensed at his arrogance, replied with great warmth, that he knew himself sufficiently qualified for playing with men of honour, who deal upon the square, and hoped he should always deem it infamous, either to learn or practise the tricks of a professed gamester. "Blood and thunder! meaning me, Sir? (cried this artist, raising his voice, and curling his visage into a most intimidating frown.) Zounds! I'll cut the throat of any scoundrel who has the presumption to suppose, that I don't play as honourably as e'er a noble-

man in the kingdom: and I insiſt upon an explanation from you, Sir; or, by hell and brimſtone! I ſhall expect other ſort of ſatisfaction." Peregrine (whoſe blood by this time boiled within him) anſwered without heſitation; "Far from thinking your demand unreaſonable, I will immediately explain myſelf without reſerve, and tell you, that, upon unqueſtionable authority, I believe you to be an impudent raſcal and common cheat."

The Hector was ſo amazed and confounded at the freedom of this declaration, which he thought no man on earth would venture to make in his preſence, that for ſome minutes he could not recollect himſelf; but, at length, whiſpered a challenge in the ear of our hero, which was accordingly accepted. When they arrived next morning upon the field, the gameſter arming his countenance with all its terrors, advanced with a ſword of a monſtrous length, and putting himſelf in a poſture, called aloud in a moſt terrific voice, "Draw, damn ye, draw; I will this inſtant ſend you to your fathers." The youth was not ſlow in complying with his deſire; his weapon was unſheathed in a moment, and he began the attack with ſuch unexpected ſpirit and addreſs, that his adverſary, having made ſhift with great difficulty to parry the firſt paſs, retreated a few paces, and demanded a parley, in which he endeavoured to perſuade the young man, that to lay a man of his character under the neceſſity of chaſtiſing his inſolence, was the moſt raſh and inconſiderate ſtep that he could poſſibly have taken; but, that he had compaſſion upon his youth, and was willing to ſpare him, if he would ſurrender his ſword, and promiſe to aſk pardon in public for the offence he had given. Pickle was ſo much exaſperated at this unparallelled effrontery, that without deigning to

make the leaſt reply, he flung his own hat in the proposer's face, and renewed the charge with such undaunted agility, that the gameſter, finding himself in manifeſt hazard of his life, betook himself to his heels, and fled homewards with incredible speed, being closely pursued by Peregrine, who having sheathed his sword pelted him with ſtones as he ran, and compelled him to go, that same day, into banishment from Bath, where he had domineered so long.

By this atchievement, which was the subject of astonishment to all the company, who had looked upon the fugitive as a person of heroic courage, our adventurer's reputation was rendered formidable in all its circumſtances; although he thereby disobliged a good many people of fashion, who had contracted an intimacy of friendship with the exile, and who resented his disgrace, as if it had been the misfortune of a worthy man. These generous patrons, however, bore a very small proportion to those who were pleased with the event of the duel, because, in the course of their residence at Bath, they had either been insulted or defrauded by the challenger. Nor was this inſtance of our hero's courage unacceptable to the ladies, few of whom could now reſiſt the united force of such accomplishments. Indeed, neither he nor his friend Godfrey would have found much difficulty in picking up an agreeable companion for life; but Gauntlet's heart was pre-engaged to Sophy; and Pickle, exclusive of his attachment to Emily, which was ſtronger than he himself imagined, possessed such a share of ambition, as could not be satisfied with the conqueſt of any female he beheld at Bath.

His visits were, therefore, promiscuous, without any other view than that of amusement; and though his

pride was flattered by the advances of the fair whom he had captivated, he never harboured one thought of proceeding beyond the limits of common gallantry, and carefully avoided all particular explanations. But, what above all other enjoyments yielded him the most agreeable entertainment, was the secret history of characters, which he learn'd from a very extraordinary person, with whom he became acquainted in this manner.

Being at the house of a certain lady, on a visiting-day, he was struck with the appearance of an old man, who no sooner entered the room than the mistress of the house very kindly desired one of the wits present to roast the old put. This petit maitre, proud of the employment, went up to the senior, who had something extremely peculiar and significant in his countenance, and saluting him with divers fashionable congés, accosted him in these words: "Your servant, you old rascal. I hope to have the honour of seeing you hang'd. I vow to Gad! you look extremely shocking, with these gummy eyes, lanthorn jaws, and toothless chaps. What! you squint at the ladies, you old rotten medlar? Yes, yes, we understand your ogling; but you must content yourself with a cook-maid, sink me! I see you want to sit. These wither'd shanks of yours tremble under their burthen: but you must have a little patience, old Hirco; indeed you must. I intend to mortify you a little longer, curse me!"

The company was so tickled with this address, which was delivered with much grimace and gesticulation, that they burst out into a loud fit of laughter, which they fathered upon a monkey that was chained in the room; and when the peal was over, the wit renewed his attack, in these words: "I suppose you are fool enough to think

this mirth was occasioned by Pug: ay, there he is; you had best survey him; he is of your own family, switch me: but the laugh was at your expence; and you ought to thank heaven for making you so ridiculous." While he uttered these ingenious ejaculations, the old gentleman bowed alternately to him and the monkey, that seemed to grin and chatter in imitation of the beau, and with an arch solemnity of visage, pronounced, "Gentlemen, as I have not the honour to understand your compliments, they will be much better bestowed on each other." So saying, he seated himself, and had the satisfaction to see the laugh returned upon the aggressor, who remained confounded and abashed, and in a few minutes left the room, muttering, as he retired, "the old fellow grows scurrilous, stap my breath."

While Peregrine wondered in silence at this extraordinary scene, the lady of the house perceiving his surprize, gave him to understand, that the ancient visitant was utterly bereft of the sense of hearing; that his name was Cadwallader Crabtree: his disposition altogether misanthropical; and that he was admitted into company on account of the entertainment he afforded by his sarcastic observations, and the pleasant mistakes to which he was subject from his infirmity. Nor did our hero wait a long time for an illustration of this odd character. Every sentence he spoke was replete with gall; nor did his satire consist in general reflections, but in a series of remarks, which had been made through the medium of a most whimsical peculiarity of opinion.

Among those who were present at this assembly was a young officer, who having by dint of interest obtained a seat in the lower house, thought it incumbent upon him to talk of affairs of state; and accordingly regaled

the company with an account of a secret expedition which the French were busied in preparing; assuring them, that he had it from the mouth of the minister, to whom it had been transmitted by one of his agents abroad. In discanting upon the particulars of the armament, he observed, that they had twenty ships of the line, ready manned and victualled at Brest, which were destined for Toulon, where they would be joined by as many more; and from thence proceed to the execution of their scheme, which he imparted as a secret not fit to be divulged.

This piece of intelligence being communicated to all the company except Mr. Crabtree, who suffered by his loss of hearing, that cynic was soon after accosted by a lady, who, by means of an artificial alphabet, formed by a certain conjunction and disposition of the fingers, asked if he had heard any extraordinary news of late? Cadwallader, with his usual complaisance, replied that he supposed she took him for a courier or spy, by teizing him eternally with that question. He then expatiated upon the foolish curiosity of mankind, which, he said, must either proceed from idleness or want of ideas; and repeated almost verbatim the officer's information, as a vague ridiculous report invented by some ignorant coxcomb, who wanted to give himself airs of importance, and believed only by those who were utterly unacquainted with the politics and strength of the French nation.

In confirmation of what he had advanced, he endeavoured to demonstrate how impossible it must be for that people to fit out even the third part of such a navy, so soon after the losses they had sustained during the war; and confirmed his proof by asserting, that, to his

certain knowledge, the harbours of Brest and Toulon could not at that time produce a squadron of eight ships of the line.

The member, who was an utter stranger to this misanthrope, hearing his own asseverations treated with such contempt, glowed with confusion and resentment, and raising his voice, began to defend his own veracity with great eagerness and trepidation, mingling with his arguments many blustering invectives against the insolence and ill manners of his supposed contradictor, who sat with the most mortifying composure of countenance, till the officer's patience was quite exhausted; and then, to the manifest increase of his vexation, he was informed, that his antagonist was so deaf, that in all probability, the last trumpet would make no impression upon him, without a previous renovation of his organs.

CHAP. LXXII.

He cultivates an acquaintance with the Misanthrope, who favours him with a short sketch of his own history.

PEregrine was extremely well pleased with this occasional rebuke, which occured so seasonably, that he could scarce believe it accidental. He looked upon Cadwallader as the greatest curiosity he had ever known, and cultivated the old man's acquaintance with such insinuating address, that in less than a fortnight he obtained his confidence. As they one day walked into the fields together, the Manhater disclos'd himself, in these words: "Tho' the term of our communication has been but short, you must have perceived, that I treat you with uncommon marks of regard; which, I assure you, is not owing to your personal acomplishments, nor the

pains you take to oblige me; for the first I overlook, and the last I see through: but there is something in your disposition which indicates a rooted contempt for the world, and I understand you have made some successful efforts in exposing one part of it to the ridicule of the other. It is upon this assurance that I offer you my advice and assistance, in prosecuting other schemes of the same nature; and to convince you that such an alliance is not to be rejected, I will now give you a short sketch of my history, which will be published after my death in forty seven volumes of my own compiling.

I was born about forty miles from this place, of parents who having a very old family-name to support, bestowed their whole fortune on my elder brother; so that I inherited of my father little else than a large share of choler, to which I am indebted for a great many adventures that did not always end to my satisfaction. At the age of eighteen I was sent up to town, with a recommendation to a certain peer, who found means to amuse me with the promise of a commission, for seven whole years; and 'tis odds but I should have made my fortune by my perseverance, had not I been arrested, and thrown into the Marshalsea by my landlord, on whose credit I had subsisted three years, after my father had renounced me as an idle vagabond. There I remained six months, among those prisoners who have no other support than chance charity; and contracted a very valuable acquaintance, which was of great service to me in the future emergencies of my life.

I was no sooner discharged, in consequence of an act of parliament for the relief of insolvent debtors, than I went to the house of my creditor, whom I cudgelled without mercy; and that I might leave nothing undone

of those things which I ought to have done, my next ſtage was to Weſtminſter-hall, where I waited until my patron came forth from the houſe, and ſaluted him with a blow that laid him ſenſeleſs on the pavement: but my retreat was not ſo fortunate as I could have wiſhed: the chairmen and lacquies in waiting having ſurrounded and diſarmed me in a trice, I was committed to Newgate, and loaded with chains; and a very ſagacious gentleman, who was afterwards hanged, having ſat in judgment upon my caſe, pronounced me guilty of a capital crime, and foretold my condemnation at the Old Baily. His prognoſtic, however, was diſappointed; for no body appearing to proſecute me at the next ſeſſions, I was diſcharged, by order of the court. It would be impoſſible for me to recount, in the compaſs of one day's converſation, all the particular exploits in which I bore a conſiderable ſhare: ſuffice it to ſay, I have been, at different times, priſoner in all the jails within the bills of mortality. I have broke from every round-houſe on this ſide Temple-bar. No bailiff, in the days of my youth and deſperation, durſt execute a writ upon me without a dozen followers; and the juſtices themſelves trembled when I was brought before them.

I was once maimed by a carman, with whom I quarrelled, becauſe he ridiculed my leek on St. David's day; my ſkull was fractured by a butcher's cleaver, on the like occaſion. I have been run thro' the body five times, and loſt the tip of my left ear by a piſtol bullet. In a rencounter of this kind, having left my antagoniſt for dead, I was wiſe enough to make my retreat into France; and a few days after my arrival at Paris entering into converſation with ſome officers on the ſubject of politics, a diſpute aroſe, in which I loſt my temper, and

spoke so irreverently of the *Grand Monarque*, that next morning I was sent to the Bastile, by virtue of a *Lettre de Cachet*. There I remained for some months, deprived of all intercourse with rational creatures; a circumstance for which I was not sorry, as I had the more time to project schemes of revenge against the tyrant who confined me, and the wretch who had betrayed my private conversation: but tired, at length, with these fruitless suggestions, I was fain to unbend the severity of my thoughts by a correspondence with some industrious spiders, who had hung my dungeon with their ingenious labours.

I considered their work with such attention, that I soon became an adept in the mystery of weaving, and furnished myself with as many useful observations and reflections on that art, as will compose a very curious treatise, which I intend to bequeath to the Royal Society, for the benefit of our woollen manufacture; and this with a view to perpetuate my own name, rather than befriend my country: for, thank heaven! I am weaned from all attachments of that kind, and look upon myself as one very little obliged to any society whatsoever. Although I presided with absolute power over this long-legg'd community, and distributed rewards and punishments to each, according to his deserts, I grew impatient of my situation; and my natural disposition, one day, prevailing, like a fire which had long been smothered, I wreaked the fury of my indignation upon my innocent subjects, and in a twinkling destroyed the whole race. While I was employed in this general massacre, the turnkey, who brought me food, opened the door, and perceiving my transport, shrugged up his shoulders, and leaving my allowance, went out pronoun-

cing, *Le pauvre diable! la tete lui tourne.* My passion no sooner subsided than I resolved to profit by this opinion of the jailor, and from that day counterfeited lunacy with such success, that in less than three months I was delivered from the Baſtile, and sent to the gallies, in which they thought my bodily vigour might be of service, although the faculties of my mind were decayed. Before I was chained to the oar, I received three hundred ſtripes by way of welcome, that I might thereby be rendered more tractable, notwithſtanding I used all the arguments in my power to persuade them, I was only *mad north, north weſt, and when the wind was southerly, knew a hawk from an hand saw.*

In our second cruize we had the good fortune to be overtaken by a tempeſt, during which the slaves were unbound, that they might contribute the more to the preservation of the galley, and have a chance for their lives, in case of shipwreck. We were no sooner at liberty, than making ourselves maſters of the vessel, we robbed the officers, and ran her on shore among rocks on the coaſt of Portugal; from whence I haſtened to Lisbon, with a view of obtaining my passage in some ship bound for England, where, by this time, I hoped my affair was forgotten.

But before this scheme could be accomplished, my evil genius led me into company; and being intoxicated, I began to broach doctrines on the subject of religion, at which some of the partie were scandalized and incensed; and I was next day dragged out of bed by the officers of the inquisition, and conveyed to a cell in the prison belonging to that tribunal.

At my firſt examination my resentment was ſtrong enough to support me under the torture which I en-

dured without flinching; but my resolution abated, and my zeal immediately cooled, when I understood from a fellow prisoner, who groaned on the other side of the partition, that in a short time there would be an *Auto da Fe*; in consequence of which I should, in all probability, be doomed to the flames, if I would not renounce my heretical errors, and submit to such penance as the church should think fit to prescribe. This miserable wretch was convicted of Judaism, which he had privately practised, by connivance for many years, until he had amassed a fortune sufficient to attract the regard of the church. To this he fell a sacrifice, and accordingly prepared himself for the stake; while I, not at all ambitious of the crown of martyrdom, resolved to temporize: so that, when I was brought to the question the second time, I made a solemn recantation. As I had no worldly fortune to obstruct my salvation, I was received into the bosom of the church, and, by way of penance, enjoined to walk barefoot to Rome, in the habit of a pilgrim.

During my peregrination thro' Spain, I was detained as a spy, until I could procure credentials from the inquisition at Lisbon; and behaved with such resolution and reserve, that, after being released, I was deemed a proper person to be employed in quality of a secret intelligencer, at a certain court. This office I undertook without hesitation; and being furnished with money and bills of credit, crossed the Pyrenees, with intention to revenge myself upon the Spaniard for the severities I had undergone, during my captivity.

Having therefore effectually disguised myself by a change of dress, and a large patch on one eye, I hired an equipage, and appeared at Bologna, in quality of an itinerant physician; in which capacity I succeeded toler-

ably well, till my servants decamped in the night, with my baggage, and left me in the condition of Adam. In short, I have travelled over the greateſt part of Europe, as a beggar, pilgrim, prieſt, ſoldier, gameſter and quack; and felt the extremes of indigence and opulence, with the inclemency of weather, in all its vicissitudes. I have learned that the characters of mankind are every where the same; that common sense and honeſty bear an infinitely small proportion to folly and vice; and that life is at best a paultry province.

After having suffered innumerable hardships, dangers, and disgraces, I returned to London, where I lived some years in a garret, and picked up a subsiſtence, such as it was, by vending purges in the ſtreets, from the back of a pied horse; in which situation I used to harangue the mob, in broken English, under pretence of being an High German doctor.

At laſt an uncle died, by whom I inherit an eſtate of three hundred pounds per annum, tho', in his life-time, he would not have parted with a six-pence, to save my soul and body from perdition.

I now appear in the world, not as a member of any community, or what is called a social creature; but meerly as a ſpectator, who entertains himself with the grimaces of a jack-pudding, and banquets his spleen in beholding his enemies at loggerheads. That I may enjoy this disposition, abſtracted from all interruption, danger, and participation, I feign myself deaf; an expedient by which I not only avoid all disputes, and their consequences, but also become maſter of a thousand little secrets, which are every day whispered in my presence, without any suspicion of their being overheard. You saw how I handled that shallow politician at my

lady Plausible's the other day. The same method I practise upon the crazed tory, the bigot whig, the sour supercilious pedant, the petulant critic, the bluſtering coward, the fawning tool, the pert pimp, sly sharper, and every other species of knaves and fools with which this kingdom abounds.

In consequence of my rank and character I obtain free admission to the ladies, among whom I have acquired the appellation of the Scandalous Chronicle. As I am considered (while silent) in no other light than that of a footſtool or elbow chair, they diveſt their conversation of all reſtraint before me, and gratify my sense of hearing with ſtrange things, which (if I could prevail upon myself to give the world that satisfaction) would compose a curious piece of secret hiſtory, and exhibit a quite different idea of characters from what is commonly entertained.

By this time, young gentleman, you may perceive, that I have it in my power to be a valuable correspondent; and that it will be your intereſt to deserve my confidence."

Here the Misanthrope left off speaking, desirous to know the sentiments of our hero, who embraced the proffered alliance, in a transport of joy and surprize; and the treaty was no sooner concluded than Mr. Crabtree began to perform articles, by imparting to him a thousand delicious secrets, from the possession of which he promised himself innumerable scenes of mirth and enjoyment. By means of this associate, whom he considered as the ring of Gyges, he foresaw that he should be enabled to penetrate not only into the chambers but even to the inmoſt thoughts of the female sex. In order to ward off suspicion, they agreed to revile each other in

public, and meet at a certain private rendezvous, to communicate their mutual discoveries, and concert their future operations.

THE END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 9999 10043 708 4